

The Angelic
Conflict-

The Missing Link

Table of Contents:

Section I: Getting Started.

- 1. Introduction and Approach.**

Section II: Who is Involved?

- 2. God and His Essence.**
- 3. Satan's Essence.**
- 4. Angels.**
- 5. Man.**

Section III: What are their Similarities and Differences?

- 6. Comparison of God, Angels and Man.**
- 7. Summary of Differences between Angels and Man.**
- 8. Significant Similarities between Angels and Men.**
- 9. Comparison of Angels, Adam and Jesus Christ.**

Section IV: What Happened?

- 10. The Divine Decree(s).**
- 11. The Fall of Satan.**
- 12. The Fall of Angels.**
- 13. The Trial Of Satan and Appeal:**
- 14. Angelic Salvation.**
- 15. Cut Off Point For The Offer Of Salvation.**
- 16. Mechanics of Angelic Salvation.**
- 17. Sequence of Events to This Point.**

Section V: Why Man?

- 18. Ground Rules for the Angelic Conflict.**
- 19. The Length of the Appeal.**
- 20. Man's Role in the Resolution of the Conflict.**
- 21. The Relationship of Major Events and Time Frames to the Conflict.**
- 22. The Resolution of the Conflict on an Individual Basis.**

Section 1: Getting Started.

1. The Introduction and Approach.

- A. Since from God proceeds all matter, creatures, time and space, it is necessary to understand His character and how it relates to His creatures. Gen 1:1-31; 2:7; Psa 148.**
- B. The Lord's character does not change. Mal 3:6
"For I, the Lord, do not change;**
- C. Therefore, any conclusion that contradicts His Divine Attributes must be rejected.**
- D. As we attempt to comprehend why man exists, God invites us to seek to seek to understand the sequence of events of pre-history.**
- E. This sequence must be derived from the written Canon, logically evaluated and analyzed. 1 Cor 14:33 God is not a God of confusion.**
- F. Since God has chosen to reveal Himself and His Plan through the entire Canon, its study cannot be overemphasized. 2 Tim 3:16-17; 2 Tim 2:15**
- G. The entirety of human history involves resolution of the conflict between God and Satan. Gen 3 through Rev 20**
- H. The Angelic Conflict is considered a Basic Doctrine, but does not imply that all the answers are easy to find. Heb 6:1-2
Therefore leaving the elementary teaching about the Christ, let us press on to maturity, not laying again a foundation of repentance from dead works and of faith toward God, 2 of instruction about washings and laying on of hands, and the resurrection of the dead and eternal judgment. **Matt 25:41** Then He will also say to those on His left, ' Depart from Me, accursed ones, into the eternal fire which has been prepared for the devil and his angels;**
- I. Every Doctrine of Scripture relates to the Essence of God and His relationship to His creation, therefore any study of this topic must be constructed from a correct understanding of the Essence of God and the Stated Doctrines of Scripture.**
- J. Man's exact role in the resolution of the Angelic Conflict will not be revealed until we are in His presence, but it does not mean that we are not to seek answers to these questions, all the while growing in love. Prov 28:5 cf 1 Cor 13:2**

Evil men do not understand justice, But those who seek the Lord understand all things. (Most Bible scholars recognize that the conflict exists, passages like Eph 6:12 are undeniable in referring to spiritual conflict, but few will go much farther)

- K. It is obviously important for man to know, understand and appreciate his relationship to God, the uniqueness of Jesus Christ, and his purpose in human history.**
- L. Many factors must be analyzed to understand God's purpose for man, such as:**
- 1. Who is involved?** (God, angels, Jesus Christ and man)
 - 2. What happened at the Fall of Satan?** (This is the biggest question to answer, concerning the trial of Satan, it is the missing piece of the puzzle)
 - 3. When did it happen as per the sequence of events.**
 - 4. How long will the conflict last?**
 - 5. Where does the conflict take place?** (Heaven and earth)
 - 6. Why is there a conflict?**
 - 7. Why is man involved?**
 - 8. What are the "ground rules" for the conflict?**
- M. Problems with some conventional views:**
- 1. Some believe the conflict is resolved numerically.**
 - a. Since one-third of the angels chose with Satan (Rev 12:4) it should have been over at that point.**
 - b. Some evangelicals think that when we get everyone on earth saved at one time, Jesus Christ will return and end it. At the separation of the sheep and goats (Matt 25:31-46), all people left on earth will be saved, but there is still another 1,000 years of history (Rev 20:3,5).**
 - 2. Some believe that it is based solely in power that God will finally overcome Satan. This is an outgrowth of Eastern Mysticism (Hinduism, Buddhism, New Age), the Yin/Yang philosophy that places good and evil as equals. There is no comparison with infinite and finite power for God could eliminate Satan at any time with His power, but why does He choose not to? Cf Ps 33:6**
By the word of the Lord the heavens were made, And by the breath of His mouth all their host.
 - 3. Some believe it is based solely on volition. (Volition is a key factor).**
 - a. If they relate that to superior numbers of believers over unbelievers, then God lost for the majority of mankind will not be saved. (Believers in history are always the minority).**
 - b. If they relate it to Adam, God lost.**
 - 4. Some believe it is simply a matter of the Sovereignty of God.**
 - 5. Some believe that the outcome is based solely on obedience to the Word of God which again refers us to a subjective evaluation**

system. Individual decisions with overt actions (both positive and negative) will actually solve it.

- 6. Some believe that the conflict would be over if Adam had eaten from the Tree of Lives. (Why was it not over when he didn't?)**
 - 7. Some actually believe that there is no conflict, but it is only a picture of the difficulties humans face in this world. Cf Rev 12:7 et al**
 - 8. Satan says he rebelled when God made the "intelligent monkeys."¹
(Urantia Book)**
- N. Answers and solutions must be sought through comparison of scripture with scripture, relying on the Holy Spirit to "lead us into all truth." John 16:13**

¹ Urantia Book.

Section II: Who is Involved?

2. God and His Essence:

A. There must exist a First Cause of all things, for any Effects to occur.

(For purposes of this study we will not go into all the proofs of God's existence but rather assume that He does exist. Some information is needed though to remind us of Who He is and what he has done.)

1. This is called the "Kalam Cosmological Principle" and expresses that there must be a Creator for there to be a Creation.

William Lane Craig has formulated the argument as follows:²

- 1. Whatever begins to exist has a cause.**
- 2. The universe began to exist.**
- 3. Therefore, the universe has a cause.**

Craig argues that the first premise is supported most strongly by intuition, but also experience. He asserts that it is "intuitively obvious," based on the "metaphysical intuition that something cannot come into being from nothing," and doubts that anyone could sincerely deny it. Additionally, he claims it is affirmed by interaction with the physical world. If it were false, he states, it would be impossible to explain why things do not pop into existence uncaused.

The second premise is often supported by philosophical arguments and scientific verification for the finitude of the past. One philosophical argument is that the number of past events must be finite and cannot be infinite, meaning that the universe must be finite and therefore have begun to exist. This argument is established by the following syllogism:

- 1. An actually infinite number of things cannot exist.**
- 2. A beginningless series of events in time entails an actually infinite number of things.**
- 3. Therefore, a beginningless series of events in time cannot exist.**

One way that Craig supports the first premise is by referring to Hilbert's paradox of the Grand Hotel, a thought experiment that shows how paradoxes and absurdities would result from an infinite number of existing things. Next, after taking the second premise to be self-explanatory, he states that the universe is indistinct from a "series of events." Thus, the conclusion can be read as "a beginningless universe in time cannot exist," which is equivalent to, "The universe began to exist."

Another philosophical argument for Kalām's second premise is that an infinite collection cannot be formed by subsequent addition. If events occurring one at a time cannot ever reach infinity, the past must be finite and so must the universe. The argument is formulated as such:

² Wikipedia.

1. **The series of events in time is a collection formed by adding one number after another.**
2. **A collection formed by adding one member after another cannot be actually infinite.**
3. **Therefore, the series of events in time cannot be actually infinite.**

Craig argues that premise one is confirmed by the sequential, forward movement of time. Premise two is argued for by the contention that no matter how high one counts, one more number could always be counted. Likewise, no matter how much time passes, one more moment could always elapse. Hence, when supplanting 'universe' for 'series of events,' the conclusion logically follows and supports the main argument's second premise.

2. **The first law of thermodynamic is an expression of the principle of conservation of energy, states that energy can be transformed (changed from one form to another), but cannot be created or destroyed. It either always existed or came into existence.**
3. **The second law of thermodynamics is an expression of the universal principle of entropy, stating that the entropy of an isolated system which is not in equilibrium will tend to increase over time, meaning that things will go from order to disorder. Without energy input into a system, the system will disintegrate.**
4. **Logically it follows that to be the First Cause of:**
 - a. **Ever-expanding space requires Infinity.**
 - b. **Immeasurable energy requires Omnipotence.**
 - c. **Universal interrelationships require Omnipresence.**
 - d. **Infinitesimal complexity requires Omniscience.**
 - e. **Righteousness requires Character.**
 - f. **Responsibility requires Volition.**
 - g. **Integrity requires Truth.**
 - h. **Love requires Love.**
 - i. **Life must be already Alive.**

B. Man is truly limited when seeking to contemplate the Essence of God.

1. **Man is a finite creature seeking to fully comprehend the infinite.**
2. **In our mortal bodies, full comprehension of God simply cannot be done. 1 Cor 13:12-13**

For now we see in a mirror dimly, but then face to face; now I know in part, but then I shall know fully just as I also have been fully knows.

C. Presently, man is limited to God's Revelation of Himself in the Scripture and in nature. 1 Cor 2:16

For WHO HAS KNOWN THE MIND OF THE LORD, THAT HE WILL INSTRUCT HIM? But we have the mind of Christ. **Rom 1:20** For since the creation of the world His invisible attributes, His eternal power and Divine Nature, have been

clearly seen, being understood through what has been made, so that they are without excuse.

- D. God is one in Essence and has chosen to manifest His personality and function through three Persons known as the Trinity. Gen 1:26 Let Us manufacture man in our own image; Deut 6:4 Hear, O Israel! The Lord is our God, the Lord is one! Isa 44:6 Thus says the Lord, the King of Israel, Namely his (Israel's) Redeemer, the Lord of the armies: I am the first and the last, And there is no god besides Me. John 5:44 "How can you believe, when you receive glory from one another, and you do not seek the glory that is from the one and only God? John 10:30 I and the Father are one; John 16:13-16 "But when He, the Spirit of truth, comes, He will guide you into all the truth; for He will not speak on His own initiative, but whatever He hears, He will speak; and He will disclose to you what is to come. 14 "He shall glorify Me; for He shall take of Mine, and shall disclose it to you. 15 "All things that the Father has are Mine; therefore I said, that He takes of Mine, and will disclose it to you; John 17:3-5 "And this is eternal life, that they may know Thee, the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom Thou hast sent. 4 "I glorified Thee on the earth, having accomplished the work which Thou hast given Me to do. 5 "And now, glorify Thou Me together with Thyself, Father, with the glory which I had with Thee before the world was. 2 Cor 13:14 The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit, be with you all; 1 Pet 1:2 according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, by the sanctifying work of the Spirit, that you may obey Jesus Christ and be sprinkled with His blood. Et al**
- E. God in His grace provided a habitat for man and angels. Gen 1 & 2; Eze 28:12-19; Job 38:1-7 (More on those later).**
- F. What He has chosen to reveal to His creatures flow from His Divine Attributes.**
- G. There are two types of Divine Attribute: Absolute and Relative.**
- 1. Absolute Attributes need no object.**
 - 2. Relative Attributes describe God as He relates to man and angels. Eze 28:12-19; Job 38:1-7**
- H. His Absolute Attributes include:**
- 1. His Personhood-Absolute Attribute 1.**
 - a. God is Immaterial and normally Invisible. John 4:24**
God is Spirit, Col 1:15 And He is the image of the invisible God, the first-born of all creation.
 - b. God is aware that He exists, denoting Self-Consciousness and Self-Determination. Exo 3:14 I am who I am.**
 - c. He always acts rationally and logically, even though His creation may not understand His actions, due to a lack of extensive information. 1 Cor 14:33**

God is not a God of confusion.

- d. **God is the definition of Personality, so His Personality is Perfect. Since He is Omniscient and Absolute Truth, He knows that He is superior to His creation, and thus He accurately describes Himself without arrogance.**

2. His Infinity-Absolute Attribute 2.

- a. **God is without boundary or limitation except the limits He chooses to place on one attribute by another. He is infinite in all His attributes. Eph 2:14-16**

For He Himself is our peace, who made both groups into one and broke down the barrier of the dividing wall, 15 by abolishing in His flesh the enmity, which is the Law of commandments contained in ordinances, so that in Himself He might make the two into one new man, thus establishing peace, 16 and might reconcile them both in one body to God through the cross, by it having put to death the enmity.

- b. **God may choose to limit Himself such as when He became man and as man chose not to use all His attributes. John 1:14**

14 And the Word became flesh, and dwelt among us, and we saw His glory, glory as of the only begotten from the Father, full of grace and truth. **Php 2:5-7** Have this attitude in yourselves which was also in Christ Jesus, 6 who, although He existed in the form of God, did not regard equality with God a thing to be grasped, 7 but emptied Himself, taking the form of a bond-servant, and being made in the likeness of men.

- c. **Because God is Infinite, He exists Eternally unsustained by Himself or any other source. (Zero Entropy) Heb 7:3**

Without father, without mother, without genealogy, having neither beginning of days nor end of life, but made like the Son of God, he remains a priest perpetually.

- d. **He is the Cause of all other existence, having the Infinite power to create. John 1:3**

All things came into being through Him, and apart from Him nothing came into being that has come into being. **Col 1:16** For by Him all things were created, both in the heavens and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or rulers or authorities — all things have been created through Him and for Him.

3. His Perfection-Absolute Attribute 3.

- a. **He is the definition of Perfection. Matt 5:48**

"Therefore you are to be perfect, as your heavenly Father is perfect.

- b. **He is the Creator of Perfection. Jas 1:17**

Every good thing given and every perfect gift is from above, coming down from the Father of lights, with whom there is no variation or shifting shadow.

I. His Relative Attributes are related to time, space, matter and creatures and are not subject to any of His creation. 1 Cor 15:27

For He has put all things in subjection under His feet. But when He says, "All things are put in subjection," it is evident that He is excepted who put all things in subjection to Him.

1. Attributes related to Time:

a. God has always existed and will always exist. Thus, He is eternal. John 1:1

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. **Heb 1:10-12** And, "You, Lord, in the beginning did lay the foundation of the earth, And the heavens are the works of Your hands; 11 They will perish, but You remain; And they all will become old as a garment, 12 And as a mantle You wilt roll them up; As a garment they will also be changed. But You are the same, And Your years will not come to an end."

b. Time is God's invention and therefore He is not subject to it. Gen 1:5 And God called the light day, and the darkness He called night. And there was evening and there was morning, one day. **Psa 90:2** Before the mountains were born, Or You did give birth to the earth and the world, Even from eternity to eternity, Your are God. **Psa 102:27** But You are the same, And Your years will not come to an end.; **1 Cor 2:7** but we speak God's wisdom in a mystery, the hidden wisdom, which God predestined before the ages to our glory;

c. Time has succession and duration. Time is part of the measuring system used to sequence events, to compare the durations of events and the intervals between them, and to quantify the motions of objects. Time has been a major subject of religion, philosophy, and science, but defining it in a non-controversial manner applicable to all fields of study has consistently eluded the greatest scholars.³

2. Attributes related to Space:

a. This attribute considers His Immensity which describes God in relationship to Space. He exceeds it to an infinite degree.

b. As the Creator of space He is not subject to it. Psa 148:1-5

Praise the Lord! Praise the Lord from the heavens; Praise Him in the heights! 2 Praise Him, all His angels; Praise Him, all His hosts! 3 Praise Him, sun and moon; Praise Him, all stars of light! 4 Praise Him, highest heavens, And the waters that are above the heavens! 5 Let them praise the name of the Lord, For He commanded and they were created. **Rom 8:20-21** For the creation was subjected to futility, not of its own will, but because of Him who subjected it, in hope 21 that the creation itself also will be set free from its slavery to corruption into the freedom of the glory of the children of God.

³ Wikipedia.

- c. **He is both Imminent (in space) and Transcendent (out of space) at the same time. He exceeds the Universe to an infinite degree. Job 26:13**

"By His breath the heavens are cleared; His hand has pierced the fleeing serpent. **Psa 19:1-6** The heavens are telling of the glory of God; And their expanse is declaring the work of His hands. 2 Day to day pours forth speech, And night to night reveals knowledge. 3 There is no speech, nor are there words; Their voice is not heard. 4 Their line has gone out through all the earth, And their utterances to the end of the world. In them He has placed a tent for the sun, 5 Which is as a bridegroom coming out of his chamber; It rejoices as a strong man to run his course. 6 Its rising is from one end of the heavens, And its circuit to the other end of them; And there is nothing hidden from its heat. **Psa 102:25-27** "Of old You did found the earth; And the heavens are the work of Your hands. 26 "Even they will perish, but You do endure; And all of them will wear out like a garment; Like clothing You will change them, and they will be changed. 27 "But You are the same, And Your years will not come to an end. **Isa 45:12** "It is I who made the earth, and created man upon it. I stretched out the heavens with My hands, And I ordained all their host.

- d. **Omnipresence (which is not measurable) describes Space in relationship to God. Ps 139:7-10**

Where can I go from Thy Spirit? Or where can I flee from Thy presence? 8 If I ascend to heaven, Thou art there; If I make my bed in Sheol, behold, Thou art there. 9 If I take the wings of the dawn, If I dwell in the remotest part of the sea, 10 Even there Thy hand will lead me, And Thy right hand will lay hold of me.

- e. **He is in Space with the same Intensity at all points and even out of space. Jer 23:23-24** "Am I a God who is near, declares the Lord, And not a god far off? Can a man hide himself in hiding places, So I do not see Him? Declares the Lord. Do I not fill the heavens and the earth," declares the Lord. **Acts 17:27** though He is not far from each of us;

3. **Attributes related to Matter and Creatures:**

- a. **He is personally present everywhere but is free to be localized, even to take on human form. John 1:14**

And the Word became flesh, and dwelt among us, and we beheld His glory, glory as of the only begotten from the Father, full of grace and truth.

- b. **He is all wise, which means He knows the actual as well as the possible. This wisdom is not subject to development. Psa 147:4;** He counts the number of the stars; He gives names to all of them. Great is our Lord, and abundant in strength; His understanding is infinite. **Psa 33:13-15** The Lord looks from heaven; He sees all the sons of men; From His dwelling place he

looks out on all the inhabitants of the earth, He who fashions the hearts of them all, who understands all their works; **Matt 6:8** "So do not be like them; for your Father knows what you need before you ask Him. **Prov 8:22-30** The Lord possessed me at the beginning of His way, Before His works of old. 23 "From everlasting I was established, From the beginning, from the earliest times of the earth. 24 "When there were no depths I was brought forth, When there were no springs abounding with water. 25 " Before the mountains were settled, Before the hills I was brought forth; 26 While He had not yet made the earth and the fields, Nor the first dust of the world. 27 "When He established the heavens, I was there, When He inscribed a circle on the face of the deep, 28 When He made firm the skies above, When the springs of the deep became fixed, 29 When He set for the sea its boundary So that the water would not transgress His command, When He marked out the foundations of the earth; 30 Then I was beside Him, as a master workman; And I was daily His delight, Rejoicing always before Him,

d. He is all powerful. Psa 33:6

By the word of the Lord the heavens were arranged.

- 1). **He can do anything that He wills to do, but He chooses to not do some things. Eph 1:21**
far above all rule and authority and power and dominion, and every name that is named. **Eph 3:20**
- 2). **The prime example is that He does not overrule volitional choices made by His creatures. John 3:16; Isa 14:12-14**
- 3). **His power is under His complete control as evidenced by the creation of delicate things and life. This is known as "gentle."**

e. He is not subject to time, therefore the future concerning Matter and Creatures is just as clear as the past. Isa 46:10
declaring the end from the beginning

- 1). **He foreknows every decision but is not the Primary Cause of it.**
- 2). **He can influence it via His Word, as Satan has been permitted to do with evil.**
- 3). **God has chosen to not make mankind decide, and Satan lacks the power. John 3:16 Cf 1 John 4:4b greater is He who is in you than he who is in the world.**

f. He is the Absolute Ruler over His creation. Rev 19:16

- 1). **He establishes principles and policies that His creation is to follow. Gen 2:17; 6:1-4**
- 2). **Yet He leaves it up to His volitional creation as to whether or not to follow them. Gen 3:1-7**

- 3). **His non-volitional creation (animals) unquestioningly obeys His commands. Gen 7 Cf Jonah**
- g. **He relates to volitional creatures:**
 - 1). **He is absolutely truthful to His creation. John 7:28**
He, the Father who sent Me, is Truth.
 - 2). **He is totally faithful to His creation in everything. 2 Tim 2:13** If we are faithless, He remains faithful; for He cannot deny Himself.
 - 3). **His infinite Love for His subjects is manifested in Grace, through Mercy. Psa 145:8-10** The Lord is gracious and merciful; Slow to anger and great in lovingkindness. The Lord is good to all, And His mercies are over all His works (Cf Col 1:16) All Your works shall give thanks to You, O Lord, And Your godly ones shall bless You. **Psa 86:15** But You, O Lord, are a God merciful and gracious, Slow to anger and abundant in lovingkindness and truth. **Luke 6:36** "Be merciful, just as your Father is merciful.
 - 4). **He has chosen to deal with His subjects in grace. Eph 2:8-9** For by grace you have been saved through faith; and that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God; 9 not as a result of works, that no one should boast. **Psa 111:1-4** I will give thanks to the Lord with all my heart, In the company of the upright and in the assembly. 2 Great are the works of the Lord; They are studied by all who delight in them. 3 Splendid and majestic is His work; And His righteousness endures forever. 4 He has made His wonders to be remembered; The Lord is gracious and compassionate.
 - 5). **His creation is called to realize His Righteousness and Justice, for His Character demands Righteousness from His creatures. Lev 11:45** thus you shall be holy for I am holy.; **Isa 6:2,6** (Holy, Holy, Holy)

J. Ten Characteristics of Divine Essence.

(The first bracket () will denote the verses that refer to God the Father; the second < >, the verses for the Son; and the third [], the Holy Spirit. This is a summary of His Character, possessed by all three members of the Trinity. He is a Person, Infinite and Perfect. He relates to His Creatures, Matter, Space and Time.)

1. Sovereignty.

- a. **God is SOVEREIGN, meaning that He is King and acts accordingly. (Dan 4:17; 1 Tim 1:17; Psa 47:2, 7), <Rev 19:16; John 5:21>, [Zech 4:6; 1 Pet 4:14; 1 Cor 12:11].**
- b. **Sovereignty means, "the exercise of supreme authority within a limited sphere." God, free from external control, is the supreme authority over all creation. He is the Creator, not the created (Romans 1:20, 25).**

- c. God has the authority to establish His own plan, His own laws, and His own judgments. In short, He has the authority to act as He chooses to act, although His purposes may be hard to understand.
2. **Righteousness.**
 - a. God is absolute **RIGHTEOUSNESS**, meaning that He is perfect in every way. (John 17:25; 1 John 1:5), <1 John 2:1; Luke 1:35; Heb 7:26>, [Isa 32:15-18; Psa 143:10; Neh 9:20].
 - b. He is the standard of righteousness in every regard. He is morally complete, setting the standard we are to imitate (Eph 5:1).
 3. **Justice.**
 - a. God is **JUST**. He is totally and completely fair. (Isa 45:21; Job 37:23), <John 5:22, 30; Rev 19:11>, [Isa 4:4; 28:6]. God's justice is a response to the demands of His righteousness. God is not a "respector of persons" (Rom 2:11) and thus shows no partiality. Where sin (which is a violation of His law) occurs (Rom 5:13), His Justice must be satisfied.
 - b. Man is not able to satisfy the righteousness of God, and therefore needs a Messiah who can "propitiate" (appease) the Justice of God. The Lord Jesus Christ on the cross accomplished this "propitiation" when He died to pay for the sins of the whole world (1 John 2:1-2).
 4. **Love.**
 - a. God is **LOVE**, meaning that perfect and unconditional love is found in Him. (1 John 4:8-10; Titus 3:4; John 17:24-26), <John 15:9>, [Gal 5:22].
 - b. This characteristic of God is the basis for sending Jesus Christ to redeem mankind (John 3:16). Love is what kept the Lord on the cross to pay for our sins <Luke 23:34>; and it is the first element in the "fruit" of the Holy Spirit [Gal 5:22].
 - c. Love means doing what is right and best for others, even if there are unpleasant feelings. Christians are to partake of God's love and spread it to others so that all might come to know God (John 13:34-35).
 5. **Eternal Life.**
 - a. God is **ETERNAL LIFE**. He always has been and always will be. (Isa 57:15), <John 8:54; 1 John 5:11-12; Mic 5:2; Rev 1:8,17>, [Heb 9:14].
 - b. Eternal life has no beginning or end (John 1:1; Heb 1:12). Christians actually enter into God's eternal life and thus we possess everlasting life, which has a beginning point, but no end. God's Eternal Life teaches that He is not ever subject to death. John 3:16,36; 5:24; 10:10; 14:6; 20:31; 1 John 5:11-12
 6. **Omnipotent–All Powerful.**

- a. God is **OMNIPOTENT**, meaning that He has the power to do anything. (Mark 14:36; 1 Pet 1:5), <Matt 28:18; Rev 19:6>, [2 Tim 1:7; Rom 15:13].
 - b. An example of His Omnipotence is found in the creation of the heavens and earth (Gen 1:1). We are told that the “word of His mouth” created the heavens and His “breath” all their hosts (Psa 33:6).
7. **Omnipresent–At All Places.**
- a. God is **OMNIPRESENT**, meaning that He is everywhere at the same time with the same intensity. (Prov 15:3; 2 Chr 2:6), <Matt 18:20; 28:20>, [Psa 139:7-16]. This does not mean that God is everything (Pantheism), but that He is everywhere. It displays to us the personal nature of God.
 - b. We also see from this characteristic that God is not in isolated places at different intensities (Psa 139:7-17). He does not give less attention to some than He does others.
 - c. Because He is Omnipresent, He is able to manifest Himself at more than one place at the same time.
8. **Omniscient–All Knowing.**
- a. God is **OMNISCIENT**. He knows everything: past, present and future. (Psa 139:1-6; Heb 4:13), <John 2:24, 25; 18:4; Matt 9:4>, [1 Cor 2:10-11; Isa 11:2].
 - b. He knows the outcome of all things; not only the actualities, but also all the possibilities. He knows all of the effects, throughout all of time that each decision will bring. His eternal plan has considered all of these factors (Rom 8:28-30).
9. **Immutable–Unchanging.**
- a. God is **IMMUTABLE**, meaning that the aspects of His Essence never change. (Jas 1:17; Heb 6:17; Mal 3:6), <Heb 13:8>, [1 Cor 12:4; Eph 1:13].
 - b. This characteristic is beneficial to mankind since God will always keep His promises. He will not change His mind. He promised eternal life to those who trust in Jesus Christ. Therefore, we know that He will not change this gospel (John 3:16). If God failed to keep His promises, then He would be a liar, thus unrighteous (Heb 6:17-18).
 - c. Everything else in the universe is changing. God is the only constant. This is why hope in Him can be an “anchor” for our souls (Heb 6:19).
 - d. Because He has no source, He is unchanging. Job 1:12 And as a mantle You will roll them up; As a garment they will also be changed. But You are the same, and Your years will not come to an end.
10. **Truthful.**

- a. **God is absolute TRUTH. (Deut 32:4; John 7:28; 17:3), <John 14:6; 1 John 5:20>, [1 John 5:7, 8; 4:6; John 14:17; 15:26; 16:13].**
 - b. **This characteristic tells us that everything God utters is totally believable (Num 23:19). It is in fact impossible for God to lie (Titus 1:2).**
 - c. **The Truth is that God manifested Himself in the person of Jesus Christ <John 14:6>. Throughout history truth has been sought simply in a concept, statement or principle. This is why anything that mankind deems to be truth, must be compared with the words of Jesus Christ <1 Tim 6:3>.**
- K. God will not compromise His Essence. Satan's major focal point in history would therefore be to try and get Him to compromise His Essence one time in human history. One flaw does away with Perfection.**

3. Satan's Essence:

- A. Satan is known by a wide variety of names and descriptions that give insight into his person. "Satan" is a transliteration of both the Hebrew and Greek word that means "adversary," referring to his opposition to God.
1. Lucifer, meaning "light bearer" or "one who enlightens." Isa 14:12
 2. Anointed Cherub, meaning an special angel. Eze 28:14
 3. Serpent, referring to his guile and deceit. 2 Cor 11:3
 4. Dragon, referring to his ferocity. Rev 12:9
 5. Belial, meaning that which is worthless. 2 Cor 6:15
 6. Devil, meaning a slanderer or maligner. Rev 12:9
 7. Accuser, meaning a plaintiff in a lawsuit. Rev 12:10
 8. Evil one, referring to the nature of his plan. John 17:15
 9. Roaring Lion, referring to the viciousness of his attack. 1 Pet 5:8
 10. Enemy, referring to his opposition to Believers. 1 Pet 5:8
 11. King of Tyre referring to his arrogance. Eze 28:11
 12. Angel of light, referring to his disguise. 2 Cor 11:3
 13. Murderer (mankiller), referring to his attack on Adam. John 8:44
 14. Liar, referring to his twisting of truth. John 8:44
 15. Destroyer, referring to the effects he brings. Rev 9:11
 16. Beelzebub, lord of the flies, prince of the demons. Matt 12:24
 17. Prince of this world, referring to his domain. John 12:31; 16:11
 18. God of this world, referring to his worshippers. 2 Cor 4:4
 19. Prince of the power of the air, referring to his politics. Eph 2:2
 20. Spirit of disobedience, meaning the model for sin. Eph 2:2
 21. Father of lies, meaning his authorship of untruth. John 8:44
 22. Deceiver of the whole world, referring to future operations. Rev 12:9
 23. Tempter, referring to his ploys. Titus 3:5
- B. Satan's Origin:
1. **He was created by the Jesus Christ. Col 1:16**
For by Him all things were created, both in the heavens and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or rulers or authorities — all things have been created by Him and for Him.
 2. **He was created perfect as an angelic pattern. Ezek 28:12**
"Son of man, take up a lamentation over the king of Tyre, and say to him, 'Thus says the Lord God, "You had the seal of perfection (**Lit: You were the one sealing a pattern**), Full of wisdom and perfect in beauty.
 3. **He was a high ranking angel with an important role. Eze 28:13-15**
"You were in Eden, the garden of God; Every precious stone was your covering: The ruby, the topaz, and the diamond; The beryl, the onyx, and the jasper; The lapis lazuli, the turquoise, and the emerald; And the gold, the workmanship of your settings and sockets, Was in you. On the day that you were created They were prepared. 14 "You were the anointed cherub who covers, And I placed you there. You were on the holy mountain of God; You walked in the midst of the stones of fire. 15 "You

were blameless in your ways From the day you were created (**BARA = out of nothing**), Until unrighteousness was found in you.

C. Satan's Person:

1. **He possesses Self-Consciousness as evidenced by his use of the word "I." Isa 14:12-14**

How you have fallen from heaven, O star of the morning, son of the dawn! You have been cut down to the earth, You who have weakened the nations! 13 "But you said in your heart, 'I will ascend to heaven; I will raise my throne above the stars of God, And I will sit on the mount of assembly In the recesses of the north. 14 'I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will make myself like the Most High.'

2. **He has a soul as evidence by his intellect, the ability to make decisions, show emotion, analyze situations and direct a course of action. Isa 14:12-14; Eze 28:15** "You were blameless in your ways From the day you were created, Until unrighteousness was found in you.

3. **He is a finite being. Luke 22:31**

"Simon, Simon, behold, (the) Satan has demanded permission to sift you like wheat;

4. **He is a material being who is normally invisible to man's perception. 2 Cor 12:7**

Because of the surpassing greatness of the revelations, for this reason, to keep me from exalting myself, there was given me a thorn in the flesh, a messenger of Satan to torment me — to keep me from exalting myself!

5. **He is an angel, often referred to as a "spirit," indicating that there is also an immaterial part of his being. Matt 8:16-17**

And when evening had come, they brought to Him many who were demon-possessed; and He cast out the spirits with a word, and healed all who were ill. **Matt 10:1** And having summoned His twelve disciples, He gave them authority over unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal every kind of disease and every kind of sickness. **et al**

D. Satan's Nature:

1. **Presently he has one fundamental nature and personality which is anti-truth. John 8:44**

"You are of your father the devil, and you want to do the desires of your father. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth, because there is no truth in him. Whenever he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own *nature*; for he is a liar, and the father of lies.

2. **His character is now in total contrast to God's. Acts 26:18**

to open their eyes so that they may turn from darkness to light and from the dominion of Satan to God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins and an inheritance among those who have been sanctified by faith in Me.'

3. **Satan will compromise his character as he deems necessary. 2 Cor 11:14-15**

And no wonder, for even Satan disguises himself as an angel of light. 15 Therefore it is not surprising if his servants also disguise themselves as servants of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their deeds.

E. Satan's Essence:

1. Compared to God's Infinity:

a. He was created, therefore not eternal, so he must be a finite being. Ezek 28:15

"You were blameless in your ways From the day you were created (BARA = out of nothing),

b. As a finite being his life must have been given and thus sustained by God, which in itself is a demonstration of grace.

c. He is incapable of creating anything for God is the First Cause and source of all life. Col 1:16

For by Him all things were created, both in the heavens and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or rulers or authorities — all things have been created by Him and for Him.

d. He is subject to time because one day his time will expire. Matt 25:41

"Then He will also say to those on His left, ' Depart from Me, accursed ones, into the eternal fire which has been prepared for the devil and his angels;

2. Compared to God's Perfection.

a. He was created perfect as was all God's creation. Isa 45:18

For thus says the Lord, who created the heavens (He is the God who formed the earth and made it, He established it and did not create it a waste place BARA' + TOHU).

b. He attacks everything from God that is perfect. 2 Cor 11:3

But I am afraid, lest as the serpent deceived Eve by his craftiness, your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity and purity of devotion to Christ.

c. Satan's "standard" is to do whatever it takes to promote himself. John 8:44

"You are of your father the devil, and you want to do the desires of your father. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth, because there is no truth in him. Whenever he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own *nature*; for he is a liar, and the father of lies.

d. Attacking the Perfect is a common tendency of created beings with volition and a Sin Nature. Cf Pharisees and Christ.

e. He is not immutable so his personality is seldom consistent and thus open to imperfection. For example Satan accuses man, but always seeks to enlist man in his "army," which is why even Believers must "stand firm" against him. Rev 12:10

Then I heard a loud voice in heaven, saying, "Now the salvation, and the power, and the kingdom of our God and the authority of His

Christ have come, for the accuser of our brethren has been thrown down, he who accuses them before our God day and night. **Eph 6:11** Put on the full armor of God, so that you will be able to stand firm against the schemes of the devil. **1 Pet 5:8** Be of sober spirit, be on the alert. Your adversary, the devil, prowls around like a roaring lion, seeking someone to devour.

3. Compared to God's Omniscience:

a. His knowledge is acquired since God preceded him. Ezek 28:15

"You were blameless in your ways From the day you were created **(BARA = out of nothing)**,

b. He would receive information both before and after his fall, thus he is not Omniscient. 1 Pet 1:12

It was revealed to them that they were not serving themselves, but you, in these things which now have been announced to you through those who preached the gospel to you by the Holy Spirit sent from heaven — things into which angels long to look.

c. He is a super genius by any standard of created being. Eze 28:12

"Son of man, take up a lamentation over the king of Tyre and say to him, 'Thus says the Lord God, "You had the seal of perfection, Full of wisdom and perfect in beauty. **2 Cor 11:3** But I am afraid, lest as the serpent deceived Eve by his craftiness, your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity and purity of devotion to Christ.

d. His knowledge is greater than man's for it includes a realm that is unseen to man.

e. He knows the future only through what God has revealed. 1 Pet 1:12

f. Being a finite creature, with a finite knowledge, he can only see the actual and consider the possible.

g. Thus, overt and observable actions play an important role in the resolution of the Angelic Conflict

(Mental Attitude determines the quality of relationship to God while overt actions clearly impact the Angelic Conflict.)

4. Compared to God's Omnipotence and Sovereignty:

a. Satan is a powerful creature and all angels are more powerful than man. Eph 2:2 prince of the power of the air. **2 Thes 2:9** that is, the one whose coming is in accord with the activity of Satan, with all power and signs and false wonders, **2 Pet 2:11** whereas angels are greater in might and power **Rev 13:2** the dragon gave him his power

b. His power does not approach the Omnipotence of God. 2 Thes 2:8 Then that lawless one will be revealed whom the Lord will slay with the breath of His mouth and bring to an end by the appearance of His coming;

- c. **He seeks the Sovereign rule of man, indicating that he does not possess it. Rev 13:7-8**

It was also given to him to make war with the saints and to overcome them, and authority over every tribe and people and tongue and nation was given to him. 8 All who dwell on the earth will worship him, everyone whose name has not been written from the foundation of the world in the book of life of the Lamb who has been slain.

- d. **He wants to usurp the authority of God. Isa 14:12-14**

F. Satan contrasted with mankind:

1. **He is an unwavering liar who would only tell the truth if he thought it could get distorted. Gen 3:1-5 Cf John 8:44 Cf Matt 4**

2. **He is not faithful to man, seeking their worship and service to him. Matt 4:8-10**

Again, the devil took Him to a very high mountain and showed Him all the kingdoms of the world and their glory; 9 and he said to Him, " All these things I will give You, if You fall down and worship me." 10 Then Jesus said to him, "Go, Satan! For it is written, 'YOU SHALL WORSHIP THE LORD YOUR GOD, AND SERVE HIM ONLY.'" **Rev 12:10**

Then I heard a loud voice in heaven, saying, "Now the salvation, and the power, and the kingdom of our God and the authority of His Christ have come, for the accuser of our brethren has been thrown down, he who accuses them before our God day and night.

3. **He does not accept the principle of grace because evil is an outgrowth of the rejection of grace and salvation by works. Gen 3:7 (Fig leaves)**

4. **Mankind may share Satan's destiny by not believing in Jesus Christ. Matt 25:41**

"Then He will also say to those on His left, ' Depart from Me, accursed ones, into the eternal fire which has been prepared for the devil and his angels;

G. His Method of attack.

1. **Counterfeit of the truth. 2 Cor 11:13-14**

For such men are false apostles, deceitful workers, disguising themselves as apostles of Christ. 14 No wonder, for even Satan disguises himself as an angel of light.

2. **False gospels. Gal 1:6-8**

(wide range that includes everything that leaves out belief in Jesus Christ)
6 I am amazed that you are so quickly deserting Him who called you by the grace of Christ, for a different gospel; 7 which is really not another; only there are some who are disturbing you and want to distort the gospel of Christ. 8 But even if we, or an angel from heaven, should preach to you a gospel contrary to what we have preached to you, he is to be accursed!

3. **False doctrines. 1 Tim 4:1-3**

But the Spirit explicitly says that in later times some will fall away from the faith, paying attention to deceitful spirits and doctrines of demons, 2 by means of the hypocrisy of liars seared in their own conscience as with a branding iron, 3 men who forbid marriage and advocate abstaining from foods which God has created to be gratefully shared in by those who believe and know the truth. **2 Pet 3:3-15**

4. False ministers, prophets and evangelists. 2 Cor 11:3-4, 13-14

But I am afraid that, as the serpent deceived Eve by his craftiness, your minds will be led astray from the simplicity and purity of devotion to Christ. 4 For if one comes and preaches another Jesus whom we have not preached, or you receive a different spirit which you have not received, or a different gospel which you have not accepted, you bear this beautifully.

5. A false communion table called idolatry. 1 Cor 10:13-21

No temptation has overtaken you but such as is common to man; and God is faithful, who will not allow you to be tempted beyond what you are able, but with the temptation will provide the way of escape also, so that you will be able to endure it. 14 Therefore, my beloved, flee from idolatry. 15 I speak as to wise men; you judge what I say. 16 Is not the cup of blessing which we bless a sharing in the blood of Christ? Is not the bread which we break a sharing in the body of Christ? 17 Since there is one bread, we who are many are one body; for we all partake of the one bread. 18 Look at the nation Israel; are not those who eat the sacrifices sharers in the altar? 19 What do I mean then? That a thing sacrificed to idols is anything, or that an idol is anything? 20 No, but I say that the things which the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to demons and not to God; and I do not want you to become sharers in demons. 21 You cannot drink the cup of the Lord and the cup of demons; you cannot partake of the table of the Lord and the table of demons.

6. False brotherhood and fatherhood concept. John 8:44

"You are of your father the devil, and you want to do the desires of your father. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth, because there is no truth in him. Whenever he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own *nature*; for he is a liar, and the father of lies.

7. The hindrance of communication God's Word. 1 Thes 2:18

For we wanted to come to you — I, Paul, more than once — and yet Satan hindered us.

8. Accusations of believers. 2 Cor 2:10-11

But one whom you forgive anything, I forgive also; for indeed what I have forgiven, if I have forgiven anything, I did it for your sakes in the presence of Christ, 11 so that no advantage would be taken of us by Satan, for we are not ignorant of his schemes. **Rev 12:9-10**

9. Encouragement of mental sins such as worry. 1 Peter 5:6-9

Therefore humble yourselves under the mighty hand of God, that He may exalt you at the proper time, 7 casting all your anxiety on Him, because He cares for you. 8 Be of sober spirit, be on the alert. Your adversary, the devil, prowls around like a roaring lion, seeking someone to devour. 9 But

resist him, firm in your faith, knowing that the same experiences of suffering are being accomplished by your brethren who are in the world.

10. He seeks to confuse God's Viewpoint being a director of disorder. Jas 3:15-16

This wisdom is not that which comes down from above, but is earthly, natural, demonic. 16 For where jealousy and selfish ambition exist, there is disorder and every evil thing.

a. Toward yourself. Heb 12:1-3

Therefore, since we have so great a cloud of witnesses surrounding us, let us also lay aside every encumbrance and the sin which so easily entangles us, and let us run with endurance the race that is set before us, 2 fixing our eyes on Jesus, the author and perfecter of faith, who for the joy set before Him endured the cross, despising the shame, and has sat down at the right hand of the throne of God. 3 For consider Him who has endured such hostility by sinners against Himself, so that you will not grow weary and lose heart.

b. Toward things. 1 Cor 10:11

Now these things happened to them as an example, and they were written for our instruction, upon whom the ends of the ages have come.

c. Toward others. Jer 17:5-7

Thus says the Lord, "Cursed is the man who trusts in mankind And makes flesh his strength, And whose heart turns away from the Lord. 6 "For he will be like a bush in the desert And will not see when prosperity comes, But will live in stony wastes in the wilderness, A land of salt without inhabitant. 7 "Blessed is the man who trusts in the Lord And whose trust is the Lord.

11. He uses man's fear of death. Heb 2:14-15

Therefore, since the children share in flesh and blood, He Himself likewise also partook of the same, that through death He might render powerless him who had the power of death, that is, the devil, 15 and might free those who through fear of death were subject to slavery all their lives. **Psa23:4** Even though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I fear no evil, for You are with me; Your rod and Your staff, they comfort me.

12. He blinds man with the temptations of the world. 2 Cor 4:1-4

Therefore, since we have this ministry, as we received mercy, we do not lose heart, 2 but we have renounced the things hidden because of shame, not walking in craftiness or adulterating the word of God, but by the manifestation of truth commending ourselves to every man's conscience in the sight of God. 3 And even if our gospel is veiled, it is veiled to those who are perishing, 4 in whose case the god of this world has blinded the minds of the unbelieving so that they might not see the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God.

H. His systems of Anti-Theistic thought:

1. **Atheism which says there is no God and leads to Nihilism which is lack of belief in anything. Hedonism, the love of pleasure, is an outgrowth of this. Cf 1 Cor 15:32**
If from human motives I fought with wild beasts at Ephesus, what does it profit me? If the dead are not raised, ET US EAT AND DRINK, FOR TOMORROW WE DIE.
2. **Agnosticism which answers the question "Does God exist?" with "I don't know." It still functions daily on faith.** (Says that God is what you make Him and make free will their god - not bound by rules so anarchy exists; Existentialism comes from this) **Cf Rom 1:20**
For since the creation of the world His invisible attributes, His eternal power and divine nature, have been clearly seen, being understood through what has been made, so that they are without excuse.
3. **Evolution. Cf 2 Pet 3:3-4**
A Know this first of all, that in the last days mockers will come with their mocking, following after their own lusts, 4 and saying, "Where is the promise of His coming? For ever since the fathers fell asleep, all continues just as it was from the beginning of creation."
 - a. **Theistic evolution says God caused it. Cf Gen 1**
 - b. **Atheistic evolution says nothing caused it, it just happened.**
 - c. **Materialism grows out of this, which bases its philosophy on matter being eternal and the first cause of everything.**
4. **Polytheism claims that there are many gods with attributes and functions spread out. Cf Deut 6:4**
Hear, O Israel! The Lord is our God, the Lord is one!
5. **Idealists say that everything is getting better. Cf Heb 1:10-12**
And, "YOU, LORD, IN THE BEGINNING LAID THE FOUNDATION OF THE EARTH, AND THE HEAVENS ARE THE WORKS OF YOUR HANDS; 11 THEY WILL PERISH, BUT YOU REMAIN; AND THEY ALL WILL BECOME OLD LIKE A GARMENT, 12 AND LIKE A MANTLE YOU WILL ROLL THEM UP; LIKE A GARMENT THEY WILL ALSO BE CHANGED. BUT YOU ARE THE SAME, AND YOUR YEARS WILL NOT COME TO AN END."
6. **Representational Realism says that everything that is in existence is made of material, so if it can't be perceived through the five senses then it doesn't exist. Initially done by Aristotle, picked up by Bertrand Russell, Baruch Spinoza, Descartes and John Locke. It is a very relativistic approach that varies based on definitions of the defining words. Just another way to cloud the Truth of God.**
7. **Pantheism says that God and the universe including nature are identical and thus is deserving of the deepest reverence. Held to by most of the world religions who equate the created with the Creator. Cf Rom 1:25**
For they exchanged the truth of God for a lie, and worshiped and served the creature rather than the Creator, who is blessed forever. Amen.

8. **Deism says that God created everything perfect, but at the fall of man ceased to have anything else to do with His creation, thus there is no need for faith or organized religion. This position recognizes Righteousness and Justice, but not Grace. Became prominent in the 17th and 18th Centuries in the United Kingdom, France, the United States and Ireland.**
9. **Positivism says that authentic knowledge is that which is based on experience of the senses and positive verification. It is found in the ancient Greeks and has been recurrent throughout history. It was redeveloped by August Comte and adapted by Laplace so that “scientific method” replaced metaphysics.**
(If applied purely, if you have not been to Tibet, you don’t “know” it exists)
10. **Monism says that there is one principle in the universe and that it can be either good or bad, but they haven't yet decided which. It says this is unity in any given field of inquiry. Since the universe is really just one thing, despite its many appearances, it is one god with many manifestations through different religions.**
11. **Dualism. This is the Yin-Yang philosophy that says the universe is half-good and half-evil and that they are in a never-ending battle. It is a co-eternal binary opposition. (Star Wars)**
12. **Pluralism says that there are as many worlds as there are minds to make them, so you are really a figment of your own imagination.**
13. **Humanism says that man is the highest being and therefore god so man must solve all its problems.**

4. Angels.

A. Scripture Declares the Existence of Angels.

1. **MAL'AK = Hebrew, used 213x; basic meaning is "messenger."**
 - a. **Used about 65x for the Angel of the Lord.**
 - b. **Used about 97x for men.**
2. **KeRUBH = Hebrew, used 91x, translated as "Cherub." The meaning of this word is not determined. It has been identified as everything from power to grace.**
3. **AGGELOS = Greek, used 175x, basic meaning is "messenger."**
 - a. **Used about 14x of the Angel of the Lord.**
 - b. **Used about 14x of men.**
4. **Jesus Himself taught the existence of angels. Matt 18:10**

"See that you do not despise one of these little ones, for I say to you that their angels in heaven continually see the face of My Father who is in heaven. **Matt 26:52-53** Then Jesus said to him, "Put your sword back into its place; for all those who take up the sword shall perish by the sword. 53 "Or do you think that I cannot appeal to My Father, and He will at once put at My disposal more than twelve legions of angels?"

B. The Creation of Angels:

1. **Angels were created out of nothing, after the universe and before man. Ezek 28:13-14**

"You were in Eden, the garden of God; Every precious stone was your covering: The ruby, the topaz and the diamond; The beryl, the onyx and the jasper; The lapis lazuli, the turquoise and the emerald; And the gold, the workmanship of your settings and sockets, Was in you. On the day that you were created (**BARA = created out of nothing, like in Gen 1:1**) They were prepared. (**Pulal PF KONAN = Pulal is an intensive passive and indicates the action is prior to another, i.e. preparation before creation** 14 "You were the anointed cherub who covers, And I placed you there. You were on the holy mountain of God; You walked in the midst of the stones of fire.
2. **They were created at His command, with the clear implication that it was instantaneous, although different as to sequence. Psa 148:1-5**

Praise the Lord! Praise the Lord from the heavens; Praise Him in the heights! 2 Praise Him, all His angels; Praise Him, all His hosts! 3 Praise Him, sun and moon; Praise Him, all stars of light! 4 Praise Him, highest heavens, And the waters that are above the heavens! 5 Let them praise the name of the Lord, For He commanded and they were created (**Niph PF BARA' = out of nothing and Niph means these creatures and matter were made by a conscious being**). **Psa 33:6** By the word of the Lord the heavens were made, And by the breath of His mouth all their host.
3. **Thus, they were there at the restoration and population of the earth. Job 38:1-7**

Then the Lord answered Job out of the whirlwind and said, 2 "Who is this that darkens counsel By words without knowledge? 3 "Now gird up your loins like a man, And I will ask you, and you instruct Me! 4 "Where were you when I laid the foundation of the earth? Tell Me, if you have understanding, 5 Who set its measurements? Since you know. Or who stretched the line on it? 6 "On what were its bases sunk? Or who laid its cornerstone, 7 When the morning stars sang together And all the sons of God shouted for joy?

4. He made a lot of them. Heb 12:22

But you have come to Mount Zion and to the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to myriads of angels, **Rev 5:11** Then I looked, and I heard the voice of many angels around the throne and the living creatures and the elders; and the number of them was myriads of myriads, and thousands of thousands,

5. They were initially created with order like armies having various ranks, as indicated by the word "hosts" which refers to "armies." 1 Kings 22:19

Micaiah said, "Therefore, hear the word of the Lord. I saw the Lord sitting on His throne, and all the host of heaven standing by Him on His right and on His left.

C. God Created Them Perfectly Complete. Eze 28:12-15

"Son of man, take up a lamentation over the king of Tyre and say to him, 'Thus says the Lord God, "You had the seal of perfection, Full of wisdom and perfect in beauty. 13 "You were in Eden, the garden of God; Every precious stone was your covering: The ruby, the topaz and the diamond; The beryl, the onyx and the jasper; The lapis lazuli, the turquoise and the emerald; And the gold, the workmanship of your settings and sockets, Was in you. On the day that you were created They were prepared. 14 "You were the anointed cherub who covers, And I placed you there. You were on the holy mountain of God; You walked in the midst of the stones of fire. 15 "You were blameless in your ways From the day you were created Until unrighteousness was found in you.

1. Perfection in a conscious being would include the elements of the soul with the perfect ability to decide.

2. It does not mean they all look the same for they do have differing characteristics. Eze 1 Cf Isa 6:2,6

3. They are a higher order of being than humans and thus distinct, therefore they are not spiritual manifestations of human beings. Heb 2:5-7

For He did not subject to angels the world to come, concerning which we are speaking. 6 But one has testified somewhere, saying, "WHAT IS MAN, THAT YOU REMEMBER HIM? OR THE SON OF MAN, THAT YOU ARE CONCERNED ABOUT HIM? 7 "YOU HAVE MADE HIM FOR A LITTLE WHILE LOWER THAN THE ANGELS; YOU HAVE CROWNED HIM WITH GLORY AND HONOR, AND HAVE APPOINTED HIM OVER THE WORKS OF YOUR HANDS;

4. **They do not marry and are referred to as masculine. Mark 12:24-25**
Jesus said to them, "Is this not the reason you are mistaken, that you do not understand the Scriptures or the power of God? 25 "For when they rise from the dead, they neither marry nor are given in marriage, but are like angels in heaven. & **Luke 20:36**

D. The Spiritual Status of Angels:

1. **Some chose to follow God, others chose to follow Satan. Rev 12:7-9**
And there was war in heaven, Michael and his angels waging war with the dragon. The dragon and his angels waged war, 8 and they were not strong enough, and there was no longer a place found for them in heaven. 9 And the great dragon was thrown down, the serpent of old who is called the devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; he was thrown down to the earth, and his angels were thrown down with him.
2. **Some angels who chose God are called "Godly" or "chosen" in one place in Scripture. 1 Tim 5:21**
I solemnly charge you in the presence of God and of Christ Jesus and of His chosen angels, to maintain these principles without bias, doing nothing in a spirit of partiality.
3. **In this study we will use the term "Godly" for those who chose to follow God and "ungodly" for those who chose against Him. More in depth analysis will follow.**
4. **Godly angels are citizens of the heavenly Jerusalem. Heb 12:22**
But you have come to Mount Zion and to the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to myriads of angels,
5. **Even Godly angels can have varying states of loyalty. Dan 10:21**
"However, I will tell you what is inscribed in the writing of truth. Yet there is no one who stands firmly with me against these forces except Michael your prince.

E. The Essence of All Angels:

1. **They have souls and spirits, documented by a prior analysis of Satan's soul. Heb 1:7** who makes His angels spirits (**PNEUMA**) **Heb 1:14** are they (angels) not all ministering spirits,
2. **They possess intellect, curiosity and interests which develops personality. Acts 19:13-15**
But also some of the Jewish exorcists, who went from place to place, attempted to name over those who had the evil spirits the name of the Lord Jesus, saying, "I adjure you by Jesus whom Paul preaches." 14 Seven sons of one Sceva, a Jewish chief priest, were doing this. 15 And the evil spirit answered and said to them, "I recognize Jesus, and I know about Paul, but who are you?"
3. **Their doctrinal knowledge is incomplete since they learn from man. 1 Pet 1:12** things into which angels long to look.
4. **This especially includes prophecy and Church Age doctrine. It seems they understood sin. Eph 3:10** in order that the manifold wisdom

of God might now be made known thru the church to the rulers and authorities in the heavenlies. **Heb 2:1-3** For this reason we must pay much closer attention to what we have heard, so that we do not drift away from it. 2 For if the word spoken through angels proved unalterable, and every transgression and disobedience received a just penalty, 3 how will we escape if we neglect so great a salvation?

5. **They have tremendous power. 2 Pet 2:10-11**

Daring, self-willed, they (**false teachers**) do not tremble when they revile angelic majesties, 11 whereas angels who are greater in might and power do not bring a reviling judgment against them before the Lord. **Rev 18:21** Then a strong angel took up a stone like a great millstone and threw it into the sea, saying, "So will Babylon, the great city, be thrown down with violence, and will not be found any longer.

6. **They have bodies comprised of some type of matter, although normally invisible to man, that can be harnessed to touch the physical realm. Gen 19:10**

But the men reached out their hands and brought Lot into the house with them, and shut the door. **Gen 19:16** But he hesitated. So the men seized his hand and the hand of his wife and the hands of his two daughters, for the compassion of the Lord was upon him; and they brought him out, and put him outside the city. **Cf Gen 6:1-4** (If angels are not some type of material beings, they created from nothing the seed to "impregnate the daughters of men")

7. **They are not subject to physical death. Luke 20:34-36**

Jesus said to them, "The sons of this age marry and are given in marriage, 35 but those who are considered worthy to attain to that age and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry nor are given in marriage; 36 for they cannot even die anymore, because they are like angels, and are sons of God, being sons of the resurrection.

a. **Being a spiritual creature (Heb 1:14), sin would render them spiritually dead. Eze 28:15**

"You were blameless in your ways From the day you were created Until unrighteousness was found in you.

b. **And those that chose with Satan would be subject to the Second Death, which is the Lake of Fire. Matt 25:41**

"Then He will also say to those on His left, 'Depart from Me, accursed ones, into the eternal fire which has been prepared for the devil and his angels; **Rev 20:14** Then death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire. This is the second death, the lake of fire.

c. **Their problem is similar to man's twofold problem of Adam stated, "Dying, you shall die!" Gen 2:16-17**

The Lord God commanded the man, saying, "From any tree of the garden you may eat freely; 17 but from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat, for in the day that you eat from it you will surely die."

F. Angelic Habitats:

1. **Both Godly and ungodly angels presently have access to both heaven and earth. Mark 13:32**
But of that day or hour no one knows, not even the angels in heaven, nor the Son, but the Father alone.
2. **Ungodly angels will have access to Heaven until near the midpoint of the Tribulation. Rev 12:7-9** And there was war in heaven, Michael and his angels waging war with the dragon. The dragon and his angels waged war, 8 and they were not strong enough, and there was no longer a place found for them in heaven. 9 And the great dragon was thrown down, the serpent of old who is called the devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; he was thrown down to the earth, and his angels were thrown down with him.
3. **Some Ungodly angels were confined to Tartarus because of infiltration of humanity before the Flood. Gen 6:1-4**
Now it came about, when men began to multiply on the face of the land, and daughters were born to them, 2 that the sons of God saw that the daughters of men were beautiful; and they took wives for themselves, whomever they chose. 3 Then the Lord said, "My Spirit shall not strive with man forever, because he also is flesh; nevertheless his days shall be one hundred and twenty years." 4 The Nephilim were on the earth in those days, and also afterward, when the sons of God came in to the daughters of men, and they bore children to them. Those were the mighty men who were of old, men of renown.; **Jude 6** And angels who did not keep their own domain, but abandoned their proper abode, He has kept in eternal bonds under darkness for the judgment of the great day, **Cf 2 Pet 2:4** For if God did not spare angels when they sinned, but cast them into hell and committed them to pits of darkness, reserved for judgment;
4. **They will spend eternity in the Lake of Fire. Matt 25:41**
Then He will also say to those on His left, ' Depart from Me, accursed ones, into the eternal fire which has been prepared for the devil and his angels;

G. Angelic Organization:

1. **The Godly Angels:**
 - a. **They are led by Michael the "Archangel," mentioned five times, whose name means "Who is like El?" Dan 10:13,21; 12:1; Jude 9; Rev 12:7**
 - 1) **He is leader of the angelic armies. Rev 12:7**
And there was war in heaven, Michael and his angels waging war with the dragon.
 - 2) **He is not the only Archangel, being called "one of the chief princes." Dan 10:13**
"But the prince of the kingdom of Persia was withstanding me for twenty-one days; then behold, Michael, one of the

chief princes, came to help me, for I had been left there with the kings of Persia.

3) His loyalty to God is intense. Dan 10:21

"However, I will tell you what is inscribed in the writing of truth. Yet there is no one who stands firmly with me against these forces except Michael your prince.

4) He contended with Satan over the body of Moses.

Jude 9

But Michael the archangel, when he disputed with the devil and argued about the body of Moses, did not dare pronounce against him a railing judgment, but said, "The Lord rebuke you!"

5) He is the guardian angel of Israel. Dan 12:1

Now at that time Michael, the great prince who stands guard over the sons of your people, will arise. And there will be a time of distress such as never occurred since there was a nation until that time; and at that time your people, everyone who is found written in the book, will be rescued.

b. The only other Archangel mentioned by name is Gabriel, four times, whose name means "The Mighty One of El." Dan 8:16; 9:21; Luke 1:19,26

1) It appears that he is leader of the teaching angels.

Dan 8:16

And I heard the voice of a man between the banks of Ulai, and he called out and said, "**Gabriel**, give this man an understanding of the vision."

2) He told Daniel about "Seventy Weeks" allotted to Israel.

Dan 9:20-22

Now while I was speaking and praying, and confessing my sin and the sin of my people Israel, and presenting my supplication before the Lord my God in behalf of the holy mountain of my God, 21 while I was still speaking in prayer, then the man **Gabriel**, whom I had seen in the vision previously, came to me in my extreme weariness about the time of the evening offering. 22 He gave me instruction and talked with me and said, "O Daniel, I have now come forth to give you insight with understanding.

3) He announced the birth of John to Zacharias.

Luke 1:18-19

Zacharias said to the angel, "How will I know this for certain? For I am an old man and my wife is advanced in years." 19 The angel answered and said to him, "I am Gabriel, who stands in the presence of God, and I have been sent to speak to you and to bring you this good news.

4) He also announced the birth of Jesus to Mary.

Luke 1:26-27

26 Now in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from God to a city in Galilee called Nazareth, 27 to a virgin engaged to a man whose name was Joseph, of the descendants of David; and the virgin's name was Mary.

c. There are lesser ruling angels, called rulers, authorities, powers, dominions and principalities. Eph 1:19-21

These are in accordance with the working of the strength of His might 20 which He brought about in Christ, when He raised Him from the dead and seated Him at His right hand in the heavenly places, 21 far above all rule and authority and power and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this age but also in the one to come. **Eph 3:8-10** To me, the very least of all saints, this grace was given, to preach to the Gentiles the unfathomable riches of Christ, 9 and to bring to light what is the administration of the mystery which for ages has been hidden in God who created all things; 10 so that the manifold wisdom of God might now be made known through the church to the rulers and the authorities in the heavenly places. **Eph 6:12** For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the powers, against the world forces of this darkness, against the spiritual forces of wickedness in the heavenly places. **Rom 8:38-39** For I am convinced that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor things present, nor things to come, nor powers, 39 nor height, nor depth, nor any other created thing, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord. **Col 1:16** For by Him all things were created, both in the heavens and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or rulers or authorities — all things have been created by Him and for Him.

d. The Four Living Creatures seem to replace Satan after his fall and represent the gospel. Eze 1:5-28; Rev 4:5-11

Out from the throne come flashes of lightning and sounds and peals of thunder. And there were seven lamps of fire burning before the throne, which are the seven Spirits of God; 6 and before the throne there was something like a sea of glass, like crystal; and in the center and around the throne, four living creatures full of eyes in front and behind. 7 The first creature was like a lion, and the second creature like a calf, and the third creature had a face like that of a man, and the fourth creature was like a flying eagle. 8 And the four living creatures, each one of them having six wings, are full of eyes around and within; and day and night they do not cease to say, "HOLY, HOLY, HOLY is THE LORD GOD, THE ALMIGHTY, WHO WAS AND WHO IS AND WHO IS TO COME." 9 And when the living creatures give glory and honor and thanks to Him who sits on the throne, to Him who lives forever and ever, 10 the twenty-four elders will fall down before Him who sits on the throne, and will worship Him who lives forever and ever, and will

cast their crowns before the throne, saying, 11 "Worthy are You, our Lord and our God, to receive glory and honor and power; for You created all things, and because of Your will they existed, and were created." **Rev 5:8-10** When He had taken the book, the four living creatures and the twenty-four elders fell down before the Lamb, each one holding a harp and golden bowls full of incense, which are the prayers of the saints. 9 And they sang a new song, saying, " Worthy are You to take the book and to break its seals; for You were slain, and purchased for God with Your blood men from every tribe and tongue and people and nation. 10 "You have made them to be a kingdom and priests to our God; and they will reign upon the earth." **Cf Eze 28:14** You were the anointed cherub who covers, And I placed you there. You were on the holy mountain of God; You walked in the midst of the stones of fire.

- e. **The Six-winged Seraphim whose name means to "burn," indicates they are ones who execute judgment. They lead in the worship of God. Isa 6:1-3**

In the year of King Uzziah's death I saw the Lord sitting on a throne, lofty and exalted, with the train of His robe filling the temple. 2 Seraphim stood above Him, each having six wings: with two he covered his face, and with two he covered his feet, and with two he flew. 3 And one called out to another and said, " Holy, Holy, Holy, is the Lord of hosts, The whole earth is full of His glory."

- f. **The Cherubim have a multitude of functions before God and are most frequently used in reference to the Tabernacle & Temple.**

2. **The Ungodly Angels:**

- a. **They are led by Satan. Rev 12:7**
- b. **Satan is the only one named in Scripture, although occult books are full of their names.**
- c. **They too have an organization similar to that of the Godly Angels. Eph 6:12; Col 2:15; Rom 8:38**
- d. **Unconfined (not in Tartarus) Ungodly Angels, often called "demons," will be operative until the Second Advent. Gen 3:15**
And I will put hostility between you and the woman, And between your seed and her seed; He shall bruise you on the head (2 Advent), And you shall bruise Him on the heel (cross) **Cf Rev 20:10**
And the devil who deceived them was thrown into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are also; and they will be tormented day and night forever and ever.

H. **The Function of Godly Angels:**

- 1. **Execute Judgment. 1 Sam 16:14; Rev 14:18** (evil spirit sent from the Lord is one who execute harm-harmful spirit would be a better translation); **Rev 16:1-20**
- 2. **Teach until the close of the Canon. Eze 1:4-28; Dan 10:10-14**

Then behold, a hand touched me and set me trembling on my hands and knees. 11 And he said to me, "O Daniel, man of high esteem, understand the words that I am about to tell you and stand upright, for I have now been sent to you." And when he had spoken this word to me, I stood up trembling. 12 Then he said to me, "Do not be afraid, Daniel, for from the first day that you set your heart on understanding this and on humbling yourself before your God, your words were heard, and I have come in response to your words. 13 "But the prince of the kingdom of Persia was withstanding me for twenty-one days; then behold, Michael, one of the chief princes, came to help me, for I had been left there with the kings of Persia. 14 "Now I have come to give you an understanding of what will happen to your people in the latter days, for the vision pertains to the days yet future."

3. Deliver messages from God. Luke 2:8-14

And in the same region there were some shepherds staying out in the fields, and keeping watch over their flock by night. 9 And an angel of the Lord suddenly stood before them, and the glory of the Lord shone around them; and they were terribly frightened. 10 And the angel said to them, "Do not be afraid; for behold, I bring you good news of a great joy which shall be for all the people; 11 for today in the city of David there has been born for you a Savior, who is Christ the Lord. 12 "And this will be a sign for you: you will find a baby wrapped in cloths, and lying in a manger." 13 And suddenly there appeared with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying, 14 "Glory to God in the highest, And on earth peace among men with whom He is pleased."

4. Guard believers. Matt 18:10 (children); Acts 12:15-16

And they said to her, "You are out of your mind!" But she kept insisting that it was so. And they kept saying, "It is his angel." **Heb 1:14** Are they not all ministering spirits, sent out to render service for the sake of those who will inherit salvation?

5. Transport. Eze 1:4-28; Luke 16:22-23

"Now it came about that the poor man died and he was carried away by the angels to Abraham's bosom; and the rich man also died and was buried.

6. Sing. Rev 5:9-12

And they sang a new song, saying, "Worthy art Thou to take the book, and to break its seals; for Thou wast slain, and didst purchase for God with Thy blood men from every tribe and tongue and people and nation. 10 "And Thou hast made them to be a kingdom and priests to our God; and they will reign upon the earth." 11 And I looked, and I heard the voice of many angels around the throne and the living creatures and the elders; and the number of them was myriads of myriads, and thousands of thousands, 12 saying with a loud voice, "Worthy is the Lamb that was slain to receive power and riches and wisdom and might and honor and glory and blessing."

7. Affect weather. Rev 7:1

After this I saw four angels standing at the four corners of the earth, holding back the four winds of the earth, so that no wind should blow on the earth or on the sea or on any tree.

8. Seal and protect. Rev 7:2-4

And I saw another angel ascending from the rising of the sun, having the seal of the living God; and he cried out with a loud voice to the four angels to whom it was granted to harm the earth and the sea, 3 saying, "Do not harm the earth or the sea or the trees, until we have sealed the bond-servants of our God on their foreheads."

9. Evangelize. Rev 14:6-7

And I saw another angel flying in midheaven, having an eternal gospel to preach to those who live on the earth, and to every nation and tribe and tongue and people; 7 and he said with a loud voice, "Fear God, and give Him glory, because the hour of His judgment has come; and worship Him who made the heaven and the earth and sea and springs of waters."

10. Doormen of New Jerusalem. Rev 21:12-14

It had a great and high wall, with twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels; and names were written on them, which are those of the twelve tribes of the sons of Israel. 13 There were three gates on the east and three gates on the

11. Observe man. 1 Peter 1:12

It was revealed to them that they were not serving themselves, but you, in these things which now have been announced to you through those who preached the gospel to you by the Holy Spirit sent from heaven — things into which angels long to look.

12. Attend God. Eze 1:4-28; Rev 4:6-11

and before the throne there was, as it were, a sea of glass like crystal; and in the center and around the throne, four living creatures full of eyes in front and behind. 7 And the first creature was like a lion, and the second creature like a calf, and the third creature had a face like that of a man, and the fourth creature was like a flying eagle. 8 And the four living creatures, each one of them having six wings, are full of eyes around and within; and day and night they do not cease to say, "Holy, holy, holy, is the Lord God, the Almighty, who was and who is and who is to come." 9 And when the living creatures give glory and honor and thanks to Him who sits on the throne, to Him who lives forever and ever, 10 the twenty-four elders will fall down before Him who sits on the throne, and will worship Him who lives forever and ever, and will cast their crowns before the throne, saying, 11 "Worthy art Thou, our Lord and our God, to receive glory and honor and power; for Thou didst create all things, and because of Thy will they existed, and were created."

13. Minister to Christ. Matt 4:5-6

Then the devil took Him into the holy city; and he had Him stand on the pinnacle of the temple, 6 and said to Him, "If You are the Son of God throw Yourself down; for it is written, 'He will give His angels charge concerning You'; and 'On their hands they will bear You up, Lest You

strike Your foot against a stone." **Luke 22:43** Now an angel from heaven appeared to Him, strengthening Him. **Matt 26:53** "Or do you think that I cannot appeal to My Father, and He will at once put at My disposal more than twelve legions of angels? **Matt 28:2-6** And behold, a severe earthquake had occurred, for an angel of the Lord descended from heaven and came and rolled away the stone and sat upon it. 3 And his appearance was like lightning, and his garment as white as snow; 4 and the guards shook for fear of him, and became like dead men. 5 And the angel answered and said to the women, "Do not be afraid; for I know that you are looking for Jesus who has been crucified.

I. The Function of Ungodly Angels aka Demonology. Matt 12:28 Do not rejoice in the casting out of demons, but rejoice in your salvation.

1. Before the Flood, they attacked the line of the Promised Seed by cohabiting with the daughters of men. Gen 6:1-4

Now it came about, when men began to multiply on the face of the land, and daughters were born to them, 2 that the sons of God saw that the daughters of men were beautiful; and they took wives for themselves, whomever they chose. 3 Then the Lord said, "My Spirit shall not strive with man forever, because he also is flesh; nevertheless his days shall be one hundred and twenty years." 4 The Nephilim were on the earth in those days, and also afterward, when the sons of God came in to the daughters of men, and they bore children to them. Those were the mighty men who were of old, men of renown.

a. They are there called the "sons of God," to denote their unfallen origin. Job 1:6-7

Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord, and Satan also came among them. **Job 2:1** Again there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord, and Satan also came among them to present himself before the Lord.

b. These angels were incarcerated for their action. Jude 6-7

And angels who did not keep their own domain, but abandoned their proper abode, He has kept in eternal bonds under darkness for the judgment of the great day. **2 Pet 2:4** For if God did not spare angels when they sinned, but cast them into hell and committed them to pits of darkness, reserved for judgment;

c. Their sin was of such a magnitude that it required immediate discipline. Gen 6:5-7

Then the Lord saw that the wickedness of man was great on the earth, and that every intent of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. 6 And the Lord was sorry that He had made man on the earth, and He was grieved in His heart. 7 And the Lord said, "I will blot out man whom I have created from the face of the land, from man to animals to creeping things and to birds of the sky; for I am sorry that I have made them."

- d. **Their offspring was the basis of mythology. Gen 6:4**
The Nephilim were on the earth in those days, and also afterward, when the sons of God came in to the daughters of men, and they bore children to them. Those were the mighty men who were of old, men of renown.
 - e. **The reason is that they violated a rule established for the Angelic Conflict. Jude 1:6**
And angels who did not keep their own domain (T8N EAUTWN ARCH8N their own rule; law of conduct) but abandoned their proper abode (OIK8T8RION 2x; 2 Cor 5:2 for our Resurrection Body; limits established on material bodies; lit: did not keep their own law but violated their body).
 - f. **Their incarceration was not simply for attacking humanity or the line of the Promised Seed or else all Ungodly Angels would already be incarcerated.**
2. **After the Flood the attack was different in that no cohabitation was permitted. 2 Pet 2:4**
For if God did not spare angels when they sinned, but cast them into hell and committed them to pits of darkness, reserved for judgment;
3. **Terminology for Ungodly Angels:**
- a. **Sons of God. Gen 6:2,4; Job 1:6; 2:1; 38:7**
(would include the Godly Angels)
 - b. **Angels. (MAL'AK) Job 4:17-19**
'Can mankind be just before God? Can a man be pure before his Maker? 18 'He puts no trust even in His servants; And against His angels He charges error. 19 'How much more those who dwell in houses of clay, Whose foundation is in the dust, Who are crushed before the moth!; **Matt 25:41**
 - c. **Evil spirits. (PON8ROS PNEUMA) Luke 7:21; 8:2; 11:26; Acts 19:12-13**
 - d. **Unclean spirits. Matt 10:1; Mark 1:27; 3:11; 5:13; 6:7; Luke 4:36; 6:18; Acts 5:16; 8:7; Rev 16:13-14 (demons)**
 - e. **Deceitful spirits. 1 Tim 4:1**
 - f. **Demons. (DAIMWN = feminine noun 5X) (DAIMONIOV = resembling demonic activities; 1X; Jas 3:15)**
4. **Demon possession is most noted in the Gospels, as in the case with "Legion." Matt 8:28-34 & Mark 5:1-20 & Luke 8:26-39**
5. **Characteristics of Demon Possession:**
- a. **They recognize Christ immediately. Matt 8:29**
And behold, they cried out, saying, "What do we have to do with You, Son of God? Have You come here to torment us before the time?" **Mark 5:5-8** And constantly night and day, among the tombs and in the mountains, he was crying out and gashing himself with stones. 6 And seeing Jesus from a distance, he ran up and bowed down before Him; 7 and crying out with a loud voice, he said, "What

do I have to do with You, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? I implore You by God, do not torment me!"

b. **Their communication system keeps them informed of strong believers. Acts 19:15** I know about Paul

c. **It appears that possessed individuals cannot command the demons to leave them. Luke 8:26-30**

And they sailed to the country of the Gerasenes, which is opposite Galilee. 27 And when He had come out onto the land, He was met by a certain man from the city who was possessed with demons; and who had not put on any clothing for a long time, and was not living in a house, but in the tombs. 28 And seeing Jesus, he cried out and fell before Him, and said in a loud voice, "What do I have to do with You, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? I beg You, do not torment me." 29 For He had been commanding the unclean spirit to come out of the man. For it had seized him many times; and he was bound with chains and shackles and kept under guard; and yet he would burst his fetters and be driven by the demon into the desert.

d. **They can control bodily action and give their hosts tremendous strength. Luke 8:29**

For He had been commanding the unclean spirit to come out of the man. For it had seized him many times; and he was bound with chains and shackles and kept under guard; and yet he would burst his fetters and be driven by the demon into the desert.

e. **It appears that possession of animals is only done with divine permission. Luke 8:32**

Now there was a herd of many swine feeding there on the mountain; and the demons entreated Him to permit them to enter the swine. And He gave them permission.

f. **Those possessed were often stricken with physical maladies. Matt 9:32-34** And as they were going out, behold, a dumb man, demon-possessed, was brought to Him. 33 And after the demon was cast out, the dumb man spoke; and the multitudes marveled, saying, "Nothing like this was ever seen in Israel." **Matt 12:22-23**

Then there was brought to Him a demon-possessed man who was blind and dumb, and He healed him, so that the dumb man spoke and saw. **Luke 11:14-21** And He was casting out a demon, and it was dumb; and it came about that when the demon had gone out, the dumb man spoke; and the multitudes marveled. 15 But some of them said, "He casts out demons by Beelzebul, the ruler of the demons." 16 And others, to test Him, were demanding of Him a sign from heaven. 17 But He knew their thoughts, and said to them, "Any kingdom divided against itself is laid waste; and a house divided against itself falls. 18 "And if Satan also is divided against himself, how shall his kingdom stand? For you say that I cast out demons by Beelzebul. 19 "And if I by Beelzebul cast out demons,

by whom do your sons cast them out? Consequently they shall be your judges. 20 "But if I cast out demons by the finger of God, then the kingdom of God has come upon you. **Matt 17:14-18** And when they came to the multitude, a man came up to Him, falling on his knees before Him, and saying, 15 "Lord, have mercy on my son, for he is a lunatic, and is very ill; for he often falls into the fire, and often into the water. 16 "And I brought him to Your disciples, and they could not cure him." 17 And Jesus answered and said, "O unbelieving and perverted generation, how long shall I be with you? How long shall I put up with you? Bring him here to Me." 18 And Jesus rebuked him, and the demon came out of him, and the boy was cured at once.

6. Mechanics and Limitations of Demon Possession.

a. It is a physical malady. Matt 8:16-17

And when evening had come, they brought to Him many who were demon-possessed; and He cast out the spirits with a word, and healed all who were ill 17 in order that what was spoken through Isaiah the prophet might be fulfilled, saying, "He Himself took our infirmities, and carried away our diseases."

b. Therefore, they gain some control over the Brain and the body.

c. It often comes as a result of association with idols. 1 Cor 10:19-21

What do I mean then? That a thing sacrificed to idols is anything, or that an idol is anything? 20 No, but I say that the things which the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to demons and not to God; and I do not want you to become sharers in demons. 21 You cannot drink the cup of the Lord and the cup of demons; you cannot partake of the table of the Lord and the table of demons.

d. By controlling the brain, they can have direct input into the soul with their doctrines. 1 Tim 4:1

But the Spirit explicitly says that in later times some will fall away from the faith, paying attention to deceitful spirits and doctrines of demons,

e. Those who are possessed retain their volition and still have some control over their body. The Gerasene demoniac ran to and bowed before Jesus but the demon didn't want to be there. Mark 5:5-8 And constantly night and day, among the tombs and in the mountains, he was crying out and gashing himself with stones. 6 And seeing Jesus from a distance, he ran up and bowed down before Him; 7 and crying out with a loud voice, he said, "What do I have to do with You, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? I implore You by God, do not torment me!"

f. It seems reasonable that those who are possessed would actively seek possession or passively permit it due to rejection of God, otherwise all unbelievers could be possessed which is not the case.

- g. **It also seems reasonable that possession can only occur in those who have reached a state of God-Consciousness and have rejected God.**
- 1) **It seems that children would be protected by their angels. Matt 18:10**
 "See that you do not despise one of these little ones, for I say to you that their angels in heaven continually see the face of My Father who is in heaven.
 - 2) **The Syrophenician woman's daughter was almost a teenager. Mark 7:24-30**
 Jesus got up and went away from there to the region of Tyre. And when He had entered a house, He wanted no one to know of it; yet He could not escape notice. 25 But after hearing of Him, a woman whose little daughter **(THUGATRION = 2x; Mark 5:23 of Jairus' daughter cf Mark 5:42, she was 12 years old, so she is "little" in size)** had an unclean spirit immediately came and fell at His feet. 26 Now the woman was a Gentile, of the Syrophenician race. And she kept asking Him to cast the demon out of her daughter. 27 And He was saying to her, "Let the children be satisfied first, for it is not good to take the children's bread and throw it to the dogs." 28 But she answered and said to Him, "Yes, Lord, but even the dogs under the table feed on the children's crumbs." 29 And He said to her, "Because of this answer go; the demon has gone out of your daughter." 30 And going back to her home, she found the child lying on the bed, the demon having left.
 - 3) **The son of a man from the multitude was probably also a teenager. Matt 17:14-18**
 Then they came to the crowd, a man came up to Jesus, falling on his knees before Him and saying, 15 " Lord, have mercy on my son **(HUIOS = emphasis on genetics)**, for he is a lunatic and is very ill; for he often falls into the fire and often into the water. 16 "I brought him to Your disciples, and they could not cure him." 17 And Jesus answered and said, "You unbelieving and perverted generation, how long shall I be with you? How long shall I put up with you? Bring him here to Me." 18 And Jesus rebuked him, and the demon came out of him, and the boy **(PAIS = emphasis on gender and can refer to infants or grown servants)** was cured at once.
- h. **Believer's cannot be possessed because of the indwelling of the Holy Spirit. 1 John 4:4b**
 greater is He that is in you than he who is in the world.
- i. **Believers can be greatly influenced. 1 Tim 4:1**

But the Spirit explicitly says that in later times some will fall away from the faith, paying attention to deceitful spirits and doctrines of demons,

- j. **With divine permission, they can inflict physical problems on Believers. 2 Cor 12:7** (God has it under control)

Because of the surpassing greatness of the revelations, for this reason, to keep me from exalting myself, there was given me a thorn in the flesh, a messenger of Satan to torment me — to keep me from exalting myself! **Cf Job 1-2**

- 7. **Presently they have no opportunity for salvation. Matt 8:29**

And behold, they cried out, saying, "What do we have to do with You, Son of God? Have You come here to torment us before the time?" **& Mark 5:7; & Luke 8:28; Heb 2:16**

For assuredly He does not give help (**Present tense BOETHEW = indicating no "help" at the time of writing; if He never gave help it would have been in the Aorist or Perfect tense**) to angels, but He gives help to the descendant of Abraham.

- 8. **The "Casting Out" of demons:**

- a. **Jesus Christ had the authority and used it to cast out demons. Matt 4:24; 8:16; Mark 5:8; Luke 8:2 et al**

- b. **The apostles were given authority to cast them out. Matt 10:8; Luke 9:1**

- c. **The Appointed Seventy were also given the authority. Luke 10:1,17**

- d. **So could other Believers. Luke 9:49-50**

John answered and said, "Master, we saw someone casting out demons in Your name; and we tried to prevent him because he does not follow along with us." 50 But Jesus said to him, "Do not hinder him; for he who is not against you is for you."

- e. **The casting out is done via the Holy Spirit. Matt 12:28**

But if I cast out demons by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God has come upon you.

- f. **Unbelievers are in physical danger when they try to cast out demons by magic formulas. Acts 19:13-16**

But also some of the Jewish exorcists, who went from place to place, attempted to name over those who had the evil spirits the name of the Lord Jesus, saying, "I adjure you by Jesus whom Paul preaches." 14 Seven sons of one Sceva, a Jewish chief priest, were doing this. 15 And the evil spirit answered and said to them, "I recognize Jesus, and I know about Paul, but who are you?" 16 And the man, in whom was the evil spirit, leaped on them and subdued all of them and overpowered them, so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded.

- g. **The Gospel will cast out demons if the possessed person believes in Christ for the Holy Spirit will enter and remove it.**

5. Man.

- A. Man is the Third Party in the Conflict. Why?? Deut 17:6**
On the evidence of two witnesses or three witnesses, he who is to die shall be put to death; he shall not be put to death on the evidence of one witness. **Deut 19:15** "A single witness shall not rise up against a man on account of any iniquity or any sin which he has committed; on the evidence of two or three witnesses a matter shall be confirmed.
- B. Both God and the angelic creation influence the decisions of man. 1 Tim 4:1-2**
But the Spirit explicitly says that in later times some will fall away from the faith, paying attention to deceitful spirits and doctrines of demons,
- C. Man is the weakest of the involved beings. Psa 8:4-5**
What is man, that Thou dost take thought of him? And the son of man, that You do care for him? 5 Yet You hast made him a little lower than God, And do crown him with glory and majesty! **2 Pet 2:11** whereas angels who are greater in might and power do not bring a reviling judgment against them before the Lord.
- D. Natural Man can only recognize visible and material things through normal human means of perception. Cf 1 Cor 2:10-16**
For to us God revealed *them* through the Spirit; for the Spirit searches all things, even the depths of God. 11 For who among men knows the *thoughts* of a man except the spirit of the man, which is in him? Even so the *thoughts* of God no one knows except the Spirit of God. 12 Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit who is from God, that we might know the things freely given to us by God, 13 which things we also speak, not in words taught by human wisdom, but in those taught by the Spirit, combining spiritual *thoughts* with spiritual *words*. 14 But a natural man does not accept the things of the Spirit of God; for they are foolishness to him, and he cannot understand them, because they are spiritually appraised. 15 But he who is spiritual appraises all things, yet he himself is appraised by no man. 16 For who has known the mind of the Lord, that he should instruct Him? But we have the mind of Christ.
- E. Spiritual things are understood in Regenerate Man through the Holy Spirit. 1 Cor 2:10-16**
- F. As a Believer we are to walk by faith and not by sight. 2 Cor 5:7**
for we walk by faith, not by sight
- G. The appreciation of spiritual things is received in a relationship with the Lord through the ministry of the Holy Spirit and His Word. Heb 11; 2 Tim 2:15-16**
Be diligent to present yourself approved to God as a workman who does not need to be ashamed, handling accurately the word of truth.

- H. Mankind was created perfect and placed in perfect environment, as were the angels. Gen 2:7-8** Then the Lord God formed man of dust from the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living being. 8 And the Lord God planted a garden toward the east, in Eden; and there He placed the man whom He had formed. **Cf Eze 28:13** You were in Eden, the Garden of God.
- I. The first man and woman were created with Body, Soul and Human Spirit, hence, their being had a material and immaterial part, like angels. Gen 2:7** Then the Lord God formed man of dust from the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living being (**NEPHESH = soul**).
- J. Unfallen man was permitted to be tempted by Satan, and chose against God for a time. Gen 3:1-7**
- K. This parallels what Satan did with the other angels. Eze 28:18** you profaned (to cut in to thus defiling or profaning) your sanctuaries (**MIQDOSH = 74x**; used of the Tabernacle and refers to a place of worship. The “your” indicates that he was in charge of them, as the “anointed cherub” who “covers” or “protects.” More on this verse later)
- 1. Satan is called a “murderer from a beginning.” John 8:44**
 “You are of your father the devil, and you want to do the desires of your father. He was a murderer (**ANTHRWPOKTONOS 2x**; **1 John 3:15 = a manslayer, used of the one who hates his brother, so it has a direct relationship between Satan and the other angels who are “brothers”**) from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth, because there is no truth in him. Whenever he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own nature; for he is a liar, and the father of lies. **Cf 1 John 3:15-16** Everyone who hates his brother is a murderer; and you know that no murderer has eternal life abiding in him.
 - 2. This description not only refers to his influence on angels, but also on men.**
- L. Man procreates, unlike the angels, and all progeny receives the results of Adam's fall. Rom 5:12-15**
 Therefore, just as through one man sin entered into the world, and death through sin, and so death spread to all men, because all sinned — 13 for until the Law sin was in the world; but sin is not imputed when there is no law. 14 Nevertheless death reigned from Adam until Moses, even over those who had not sinned in the likeness of the offense of Adam, who is a type of Him who was to come.
- M. Mankind is born in a Fallen State and hence starts a spiritual “zero,” alienated from God and hostile to Him. Col 1:21-22**

And although you were formerly alienated and hostile in mind, engaged in evil deeds, 22 yet He has now reconciled you in His fleshly body through death, in order to present you before Him holy and blameless and beyond reproach —

- N. Man must therefore come to God from a fallen state, with an antagonistic mind, and in a hostile environment.**
- O. So every spiritual thing that comes to man must be a result of God's Grace. Cf Gen 2**
- P. If man does not undergo a change through belief in Jesus Christ, he shares Satan's destiny. John 3:18** He who believes in Him is not judged; he who does not believe has been judged already, because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. **Matt 25:41** "Then He will also say to those on His left, 'Depart from Me, accursed ones, into the eternal fire which has been prepared for the devil and his angels;

Section III: What are their Similarities and Differences?

6. Comparison Of God, Angels And Man.

- A. Absolute Spirituality:**
 - 1. God is Immaterial.**
 - 2. Angels are material in body, immaterial in soul and invisible to man.**
 - 3. Man is material in body and immaterial in soul.**
- B. God is Eternal Life, while Angels and Man have Everlasting Life.**
- C. All three parties possess Self-Consciousness.**
- D. Absolute Infinity: God is Infinite without boundary and transcends the material in body and immaterial in soul.**
- E. Man is Self-Limited by His Attributes in that one can and does compromise another.**
- F. Man and Angels have Unlimited Volition in the perfect ability to choose.**
- G. God has no Source while Man and Angels have their Ultimate Source from God.**
- H. God is Immutable while both Man and Angels are Changeable.**
- I. God is Absolute Truth and knows all Truth. He does not acquire knowledge. Man and Angels learn by choice.**
- J. God is Perfect Love and needed no object but Himself.**
 - 1. Both Angels and Unfallen Man were initially the direct recipients of God's Love.**
 - 2. When sin entered the scene, Divine Discipline was required because God's Righteousness and Justice could not be compromised.**
 - 3. God's love motivated Him to provide salvation for man, and since His Love is unchanging it is reasonable that He also provided salvation for angels. John 3:16 Cf 2 Peter 3:9 The Lord is not slow about His promise, as some count slowness, but is patient toward you, not wishing for any to perish but for all to come to repentance.**
- K. God's Integrity required that an earned penalty be satisfied.**
 - 1. Angels can acquire integrity but don't have to be satisfied.**
 - 2. Man can also acquire integrity by choice through the Word.**
- L. God is not subject to time, as are both Angels and Man.**

- M. God transcends space, while Angels and Man are in space.**
- N. God has the same intensity at all points, while Angels and Man's intensity is limited to their finite being.**
- O. God is Omnipresent while Man and Angels are not.**
- P. God is Omniscient, while Angels have less knowledge than God, but more than Man.**
- Q. God is the Absolute Sovereign, while Angels have hierarchy that is directed or permitted. Man has rulership over lower creation and towards other men.**
- R. God is Absolute Power, while Angels are simply powerful, and more so than Man.**
- S. God is Absolutely Truthful to Himself and all Creation.**
- 1. Angels had to choose whether or not to believe that truth.**
 - 2. As does man.**
- T. God is Absolutely Faithful to His Creation in expressing His Divine Attributes.**
- 1. Godly Angels are loyal to Him while the Ungodly are not.**
 - 2. Man has to make a choice concerning each circumstance.**
- U. God deals in Grace to His Creatures with volition, while Men and Angels are recipients.**
- V. God demands Righteousness and Justice from His Creatures, while Men and Angels must adjust to it.**
- W. God has Motivations which are always perfect in the expression of His Essence. Angels have True Emotions as does Man, and are therefore subject to change.**
- X. There is no Sin or Evil in God as He always chooses Righteously. His volitional creation has to choose. Begotten Man has no choice as to the presence of that which is inherently evil. Rom 7:20-25**
- But if I am doing the very thing I do not wish, I am no longer the one doing it, but sin which dwells in me. 21 I find then the principle that evil is present in me, the one who wishes to do good. 22 For I joyfully concur with the law of God in the inner man, 23 but I see a different law in the members of my body, waging war against the law of my mind, and making me a prisoner of the law of sin which is in my members. 24 Wretched man that I am! Who will set me free from the body of this death? 25 Thanks be to God through Jesus Christ our Lord! So then, on

the one hand I myself with my mind am serving the law of God, but on the other, with my flesh the law of sin.

Y. God has always been Perfect:

- 1. Angels started out that way as did Adam and Eve.**
- 2. No begotten man except Jesus Christ starts out perfect.**

7. Summary Of Differences Between Angels And Men:

- A. Presently they have a different type of body than man.**
- 1. At the Resurrection/Rapture we will have a body very similar to theirs. Luke 20:35-37**
but those who are considered worthy to attain to that age and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage; 36 for neither can they die anymore, for they are like angels, and are sons of God, being sons of the resurrection.
 - 2. They presently behold the Resurrected Christ. Rev 4-5 et al**
 - 3. Our new bodies will be able to behold Him. 1 John 3:2-3**
Beloved, now we are children of God, and it has not appeared as yet what we shall be. We know that, when He appears, we shall be like Him, because we shall see Him just as He is.
 - 4. Yet each body, both of Angels and Man will be different as to appearance. 1 Cor 15:40-42**
There are also heavenly bodies and earthly bodies, but the glory of the heavenly is one, and the glory of the earthly is another. 41 There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars; for star differs from star in glory. 42 So also is the resurrection of the dead.
- B. Angels were not created condemned (Eze 28:15), but man is born condemned in Adam. Ezek 28:15**
"You were blameless in your ways From the day you were created, Until unrighteousness was found in you. **Rom 5:12** Therefore, just as through one man sin entered into the world, and death through sin, and so death spread to all men, because all sinned
- C. All Angels, then Adam and Eve initially received God's Love, whereas mankind that is born receives His Justice with the Imputation of Adam's Original sin. Rom 5:14-15**
Nevertheless death reigned from Adam until Moses, even over those who had not sinned in the likeness of the offense of Adam, who is a type of Him who was to come.
- D. Angels are faster, more powerful (2 Pet 2:11) and more intelligent than man, but they don't surpass nor even approach God.**
- E. Angels had a choice regarding sin concerning whether or not to fall, whereas man is condemned from birth.**
- F. Mankind was initially placed in a lower status than angels. Heb 2:7**

You have made him (man) for a little while lower than the angels (Aor Act Ind. ELATTOW 3X; Heb. 2:9 where Perf Pas Ptc is used to describe Jesus Christ; John 3:30 He (Jesus Christ) must increase, but I must decrease.

1. **"Lower" in regards to humanity refers to entry into the world in a Fallen State for the descendants of Adam.**

2. **It also refers to being in a position with comparatively little glory and honor. John 17:5**

"And now, glorify Thou Me together with Thyself, Father, with the glory which I had with Thee before the world was. **Cf Heb 2:7** "Thou hast made him for a little while lower than the angels; Thou hast crowned him with glory and honor, And hast appointed him over the works of Thy hands;

3. **And subject to man's hostile environment. Heb 2:8**

Thou hast put all things in subjection under his feet." For in subjecting all things to him, He left nothing that is not subject to him. But now we do not yet see all things subjected to him.

4. **And subject to physical death. Heb 2:9**

But we do see Him who has been made for a little while lower than the angels, namely, Jesus, because of the suffering of death crowned with glory and honor, that by the grace of God He might taste death for everyone.

G. The similarities and differences between these two creatures will help answer questions concerning the Angelic Conflict.

8. Significant Similarities Between Angels And Men:

- A. Both are called "stars." Job 38:6-7**
"On what were its bases sunk? Or who laid its cornerstone, 7 When the morning stars sang together, And all the sons of God shouted for joy? **Rev 1:16** And in His right hand He held seven stars; and out of His mouth came a sharp two-edged sword; and His face was like the sun shining in its strength. **Rev 1:20** "As for the mystery of the seven stars which you saw in My right hand, and the seven golden lampstands: the seven stars are the angels of the seven churches, and the seven lampstands are the seven churches.
- B. Angels are called "sons of God," and believers become "sons of God." Job 1:6** Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord, and Satan also came among them. **Job 2:1** Again there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord, and Satan also came among them to present himself before the Lord. **cf Rom 8:12-17** So then, brethren, we are under obligation, not to the flesh, to live according to the flesh — 13 for if you are living according to the flesh, you must die; but if by the Spirit you are putting to death the deeds of the body, you will live. 14 For all who are being led by the Spirit of God, these are sons of God. 15 For you have not received a spirit of slavery leading to fear again, but you have received a spirit of adoption as sons by which we cry out, "Abba! Father!" 16 The Spirit Himself bears witness with our spirit that we are children of God, 17 and if children, heirs also, heirs of God and fellow heirs with Christ, if indeed we suffer with Him in order that we may also be glorified with Him. **Luke 20:34-37** And Jesus said to them, "The sons of this age marry and are given in marriage, 35 but those who are considered worthy to attain to that age and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage; 36 for neither can they die anymore, for they are like angels, and are sons of God, being sons of the resurrection.
- C. Both Satan and Adam "sealed a pattern." Ezek 28:12**
"Son of man, take up a lamentation over the king of Tyre and say to him, 'Thus says the Lord God, "You had the seal of perfection, Full of wisdom and perfect in beauty. **1 Cor 15:22** For as in Adam all die, so also in Christ all will be made alive.
- D. Angels have a body (Gen 6:1-4), soul (Isa 14:12-14) and are spirits (Heb 1:7, 14), while man has a Body, Soul and Human Spirit. 1 Thes 5:23**
Now may the God of peace Himself sanctify you entirely; and may your spirit and soul and body be preserved complete, without blame at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.
- E. Both Angels and Man have similar standards. Rev 21:16-18**

And the city is laid out as a square, and its length is as great as the width; and he measured the city with the rod, fifteen hundred miles; its length and width and height are equal. 17 And he measured its wall, seventy-two yards, according to human measurements, which are also angelic measurements.

- F. Both will wear the same types of garments in the Eternal State. Rev 15:5-6**
After these things I looked, and the temple of the tabernacle of testimony in heaven was opened, 6 and the seven angels who had the seven plagues came out of the temple, clothed in linen, clean and bright, and girded around their breasts with golden girdles. **Rev 19:14** And the armies which are in heaven, clothed in fine linen, white and clean, were following Him on white horses
- G. Both are called "holy." Rev 14:10**
he (one who receives the Mark of the Beast) also will drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is mixed in full strength in the cup of His anger; and he will be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy (**HAGIOS = used for those who became "holy" and those who always were cf 1 Pet 1:16**) angels and in the presence of the Lamb.
- H. Some are called "Elect." 1 Tim 5:21**
I solemnly charge you in the presence of God and of Christ Jesus and of His chosen angels, to maintain these principles without bias, doing nothing in a spirit of partiality. **Rom 8:33** Who will bring a charge against God's elect? God is the one who justifies;

9. Comparison of Angels, Adam and Jesus Christ.

- A. Jesus Christ has a definite relationship to both Angels and Man, partially displayed in the “Angel of the Lord” passages. 1 Cor 15:45**
So also it is written, "The first MAN, Adam, BECAME A LIVING SOUL." The last Adam became a life-giving spirit.
- B. All three parties started out in an unfallen condition. Gen 2:7; Eze 28:15; Isa 7:14 Cf Matt 1:24-25**
And Joseph awoke from his sleep and did as the angel of the Lord commanded him, and took Mary as his wife, 25 but kept her a virgin until she gave birth to a Son; and he called His name Jesus.
- C. All three had a body, soul and spirit. John 1:14**
And the Word became **flesh**, and dwelt among us, and we saw His glory, glory as of the only begotten from the Father, full of grace and truth. **Matt 26:38** Then He said to them, "My **soul** is deeply grieved, to the point of death; remain here and keep watch with Me." **John 19:30** Therefore when Jesus had received the sour wine, He said, " It is finished!" And He bowed His head and gave up His **spirit**.
- D. While men and angels are called stars (See Point 8.A.), Jesus Christ is called the "Bright Morning Star." Rev 22:16**
I, Jesus, have sent My angel to testify to you these things for the churches. I am the root and the descendant of David, the bright morning star."
- E. All are called “Sons of God.” See Point 8.B.**
- 1. Angels, both Godly and Ungodly are called by that title. Job 38:7; 1:6; 2:1; Ps 89:6**
For who in the skies is comparable to the Lord? Who among the sons of the mighty is like the Lord,
 - 2. Adam, since he was created by God would be a “son of God.”**
 - 3. Believers become adopted "sons of God." Rom 8:14-17; Luke 20:36**
 - 4. Jesus Christ is the “ONLY BEGOTTEN SON OF GOD.” John 3:18**
He who believes in Him is not judged; he who does not believe has been judged already, because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.
- F. Christ as an Angel:**
- 1. He is called the "Angel of the Lord" around 200 times.**
 - 2. At times He just spoke and did not appear. Gen 16:7-11; 21:17**
 - 3. He also appeared in various forms and spoke. Gen 18:1; Exo 3:2; Jdg 6:11-12**
 - 3. The “Angel of Yahweh” is clearly Yahweh delivering a message. Gen 22:11-17**

4. **He is clearly the one who REDEEMED Jacob from all evil. Gen 48:16**
The angel (**Mal'ak**) who has redeemed me from all evil, Bless the lads; And may my name live on in them, And the names of my fathers Abraham and Isaac; And may they grow into a multitude in the midst of the earth."
5. **The "Angel of the Lord" had the authority to remove the iniquity of Israel. Zech 3:1-10**
Then he showed me Joshua the high priest standing before the angel of the Lord, and Satan standing at his right hand to accuse him. 2 The Lord said to Satan, " The Lord rebuke you, Satan! Indeed, the Lord who has chosen Jerusalem rebuke you! Is this not a brand plucked from the fire?" 3 Now Joshua was clothed with filthy garments and standing before the angel. 4 He spoke and said to those who were standing before him, saying, " Remove the filthy garments from him." Again he said to him, "See, I have taken your iniquity away from you and will clothe you with festal robes." 5 Then I said, "Let them put a clean turban on his head." So they put a clean turban on his head and clothed him with garments, while the angel of the Lord was standing by. 6 And the angel of the Lord admonished Joshua, saying, 7 "Thus says the Lord of hosts, 'If you will walk in My ways and if you will perform My service, then you will also govern My house and also have charge of My courts, and I will grant you free access among these who are standing here. The Branch 8 'Now listen, Joshua the high priest, you and your friends who are sitting in front of you — indeed they are men who are a symbol, for behold, I am going to bring in My servant the Branch. 9 'For behold, the stone that I have set before Joshua; on one stone are seven eyes. Behold, I will engrave an inscription on it,' declares the Lord of hosts, 'and I will remove the iniquity of that land in one day. 10 'In that day,' declares the Lord of hosts, 'every one of you will invite his neighbor to sit under his vine and under his fig tree.'"
6. **The Angel of the Lord announced the birth of John and Jesus. Luke 1:11,13,18; Matt 1:20,24**
7. **Christ makes an appearance as an angel in heaven during the Tribulation. Rev 8:3-5**
Another angel came and stood at the altar, holding a golden censer; and much incense was given to him, so that he might add it to the prayers of all the saints on the golden altar which was before the throne. 4 And the smoke of the incense, with the prayers of the saints, went up before God out of the angel's hand. 5 Then the angel took the censer and filled it with the fire of the altar, and threw it to the earth; and there followed peals of thunder and sounds and flashes of lightning and an earthquake. **Luke 12:49** "I have come to cast fire upon the earth; and how I wish it were already kindled!
8. **And also as a "reaper of the earth."**
 - a. **Christ said the reapers of the harvest would be angels. Matt 13:37-39**
And He said, "The one who sows the good seed is the Son of Man,

38 and the field is the world; and as for the good seed, these are the sons of the kingdom; and the tares are the sons of the evil one; 39 and the enemy who sowed them is the devil, and the harvest is the end of the age; and the reapers are angels.

b. Christ does the reaping. Rev 14:14-20

Then I looked, and behold, a white cloud, and sitting on the cloud was one like a son of man, having a golden crown on His head and a sharp sickle in His hand. 15 And another angel came out of the temple, crying out with a loud voice to Him who sat on the cloud, " Put in your sickle and reap, for the hour to reap has come, because the harvest of the earth is ripe." 16 Then He who sat on the cloud swung His sickle over the earth, and the earth was reaped. 17 And another angel came out of the temple which is in heaven, and he also had a sharp sickle. 18 Then another angel, the one who has power over fire, came out from the altar; and he called with a loud voice to him who had the sharp sickle, saying, " Put in your sharp sickle and gather the clusters from the vine of the earth, because her grapes are ripe." 19 So the angel swung his sickle to the earth and gathered the clusters from the vine of the earth, and threw them into the great wine press of the wrath of God. 20 And the wine press was trodden outside the city, and blood came out from the wine press, up to the horses' bridles, for a distance of two hundred miles.

9. These passages, however, do not prove that He was an angelic at the First Advent. He was however, an obvious messenger from God. John 6:44 et al

G. Christ as the Last Adam. 1 Cor 15:45

So also it is written, "The first MAN, Adam, BECAME A LIVING SOUL." The last Adam became a life-giving spirit.

- 1. He is the only human being besides Adam and Eve to come into being in an unfallen condition.**
- 2. He produced no literal offspring as they would also be in an unfallen condition without the Imputation of Adam's Original Sin.**

H. The Trinity was the Father of the humanity of JC. Luke 1:32 He will be called the Son of the Most High. **Cf 1:35** The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Most High will overshadow you; and for that reason the holy offspring shall be called the Son of God.

1. Even the demons recognized this. Mark 5:5-7

Constantly, night and day, he was screaming among the tombs and in the mountains, and gashing himself with stones. 6 Seeing Jesus from a distance, he ran up and bowed down before Him;

7 and shouting with a loud voice, he said, " What business do we have with each other, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? I implore You by God, do not torment me!"

2. All creatures with volition who owe their existence to God are classified as “sons”. Ps 82:6

I said, "You are gods, And all of you are sons of the Most High.

I. The main point is that there are tremendous similarities between Christ, angels and Man.

1 Kings 22:18-28

Then the king of Israel said to Jehoshaphat, "Did I not tell you that he would not prophesy good concerning me, but evil?" 19 Micaiah said, "Therefore, hear the word of the Lord. I saw the Lord sitting on His throne, and all the host of heaven standing by Him on His right and on His left. 20 "The Lord said, 'Who will entice Ahab to go up and fall at Ramoth-gilead?' And one said this while another said that. 21 "Then a spirit came forward and stood before the Lord and said, 'I will entice him.' 22 "The Lord said to him, 'How?' And he said, 'I will go out and be a deceiving spirit in the mouth of all his prophets.' Then He said, 'You are to entice him and also prevail. Go and do so.' 23 "Now therefore, behold, the Lord has put a deceiving spirit in the mouth of all these your prophets; and the Lord has proclaimed disaster against you." 24 Then Zedekiah the son of Chenaanah came near and struck Micaiah on the cheek and said, "How did the Spirit of the Lord pass from me to speak to you?" 25 Micaiah said, "Behold, you shall see on that day when you enter an inner room to hide yourself." 26 Then the king of Israel said, "Take Micaiah and return him to Amon the governor of the city and to Joash the king's son; 27 and say, 'Thus says the king, " Put this man in prison and feed him sparingly with bread and water until I return safely.'"" 28 Micaiah said, "If you indeed return safely the Lord has not spoken by me." And he said, "Listen, all you people."

Section IV: What Happened?

10. The Divine Decree(s):

- A. God' Sovereignty in Eternity Past chose to manifest His Essence to share His love with others and thus glorify Himself. Psa 19:1** The heavens are telling of the glory of God; And their expanse is declaring the work of His hands. **Psa 29:2-3** Ascribe to the Lord the glory due His name; Worship the Lord in holy array. The voice of the Lord is upon the waters; The God of glory thunders. **1 John 4:16-19** We have come to know and have believed the love which God has for us. God is love, and the one who abides in love abides in God, and God abides in him. 17 By this, love is perfected with us, so that we may have confidence in the day of judgment; because as He is, so also are we in this world. 18 There is no fear in love; but perfect love casts out fear, because fear involves punishment, and the one who fears is not perfected in love. 19 We love, because He first loved us. **John 3:16** "For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him shall not perish, but have eternal life.
- B. This would be called The Divine Decree as all others would proceed from this objective.**
- C. From an infinite number of possibilities, He decided to proceed by creating Matter, Creatures, Space and Time. Rom 1:20**
For since the creation of the world His invisible attributes, His eternal power and divine nature, have been clearly seen, being understood through what has been made, so that they are without excuse.
- D. Space was created so that Matter could be distinguished. Gen 1:1**
- E. He chose to create other beings in a manner consistent with His Essence, not necessarily compatible.**
- 1. There is not, never was and never can be any Being greater than or equal to God** (Infinity applies to the rest of His Essence and cannot be duplicated.)
 - 2. So of necessity, any created being would have to hold a lesser status.**
 - 3. God did not need glorification of Himself by Himself but when the created being realized and embraced the God who is love He would be glorified as a result.**
 - 4. Neither did He need to be loved by another being, but He unselfishly chose to share Himself.**
 - 5. Of necessity, all that proceeds from God would be finite.**
- F. To expand His love into relationship with another creature required a Plan for fellowship compatible with his Essence.**

- G. This Plan required Grace for He would be dealing with lesser creatures. Luke 6:36** Become merciful, just as your Father is merciful.
- 1. Grace reaffirms the Perfection of the Greater. 2 Tim 1:9**
who have saved us, and called us with a holy calling, not according to our works, but according to His own purpose and grace which was granted us in Christ Jesus from all eternity. **etal**
 - 2. It also allows the reception of love from the lesser.**
- H. God could have created a computer-like being that had been programmed only to love and glorify Him, but He decided to go another step and establish something greater.**
- I. So for a true potential depth of a love relationship and thus greater glory to Himself, God chose to make creatures with the perfect ability to choose, but not the ability to choose perfectly every time. Gen 1:26-27**
Then God said, "Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; and let them rule over the fish of the sea and over the birds of the sky and over the cattle and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth." 27 God created man in His own image, in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them.
- J. To parts of His living creation (mankind and angels) He chose to give the ability to decide between various options. Decisions by definition means there must be multiple options, so included in volitional beings is the ability to reject a command. John 8:54**
Jesus answered, "If I glorify Myself, My glory is nothing; it is My Father who glorifies Me, of whom you say, 'He is our God';
- K. This establishes the opportunity for God to manifest His essence to a greater degree. Luke 6:32-36**
If you love those who love you, what credit is that to you? For even sinners love those who love them. 33 "If you do good to those who do good to you, what credit is that to you? For even sinners do the same. 34 " If you lend to those from whom you expect to receive, what credit is that to you? Even sinners lend to sinners in order to receive back the same amount. 35 "But love your enemies, and do good, and lend, expecting nothing in return; and your reward will be great, and you will be sons of the Most High; for He Himself is kind to ungrateful and evil men. 36 " Be merciful, just as your Father is merciful.
- L. The sequence of Divine Decrees to this point includes:**
- 1. God chose to manifest His Essence to share His love with the result of glorifying Himself.**
 - 2. He selected Matter, Creatures, Space and Time as the means with which to do it.**

3. **He chose to create other beings in a manner consistent with His Essence, though not necessarily compatible.**
 4. **To share His love He designed a means for fellowship with His Creatures compatible with His Essence.**
 5. **Of necessity these Creatures had to be lesser than He, so grace would have to be the policy to have the potential for fellowship.**
 6. **To show His love to the greatest degree God gave His Moral Creation the ability to reject His commands. Gen 1:26**
- M. From these initial desires of God, other Decrees were made concerning the habitat of these finite beings and how He would create or manufacture them. Gen 1:1-31**
- N. God is the Primary Cause of the existence of Volition outside of Himself, but is not the Primary Cause of the decisions made by that volition.**
1. **The fact that creatures are the Primary Cause of their decisions makes them solely accountable for their decisions. John 3:16,36**
"He who believes in the Son has eternal life; but he who does not obey the Son will not see life, but the wrath of God abides on him."
 2. **Being Omniscient, God foreknew every decision each creature would make. Rom 8:29**
For those whom He foreknew, He also predestined to become conformed to the image of His Son, so that He would be the firstborn among many brethren; **1 Pet 1:1-2** Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ, To those who reside as aliens, scattered throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia, who are chosen **2** according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, by the sanctifying work of the Spirit, to obey Jesus Christ and be sprinkled with His blood: May grace and peace be yours in the fullest measure.
 3. **Knowing of an event beforehand does not make one responsible for that event.**
 4. **His Plan, based in Grace, established and accounted for all decisions, whether for or against Him.**
 5. **The term "Divine Decrees," should therefore be extended only to His Primary Causes.**
- O. God, eternally perfect, desires the best for His creatures. 2 Pet 3:9**
The Lord is not slow about His promise, as some count slowness, but is patient toward you, not wishing for any to perish but for all to come to repentance. **1 Tim 2:3-4** This is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Savior, **4** who desires all men to be saved and to come to the knowledge of the truth.
- P. Any course of action chosen by His creatures will demonstrate God's Essence, whether for blessing or cursing, in His way according to His timing.**

- Q. God is so great that He does not need to control the decisions of men and angels as a Primary Cause to bring about the prophetic word concerning salvation and the events of history.**
- 1. His Plan clearly allows for decisions other than obedience to His rules. Gen 3:1-7**
 - 2. It is not that God is impotent to overrule volition, but that He chooses to not do so. If He chose to overrule all volition, all would be saved.**
 - 3. He may choose to overrule the speech or actions of any part of His creation. Cf Balaam**
 - 4. He may choose to use weather, natural phenomena, life, death, health, other material objects, animals, or mechanical malfunctions at any time, in any way and at any intensity, to direct the course of history, but mankind can choose whether to be on the right or wrong side of it.**
 - 5. God intervenes in history to bless, discipline or both.**
(Flood was blessing to Noah and family and Divine Discipline to the rest.)
 - 6. Being Omniscient, His Plan would account for all secondary and tertiary causes.** (This refers to influences on others. Truth is a Primary Cause, established by a Righteous and Truthful God; response or rejection of the Truth is a Primary Cause from the Creature; response to Truth would be a Secondary Cause of God; rejection of truth is a secondary cause from the world, flesh or the devil. Satan's decision against God makes him the Primary Cause of sin and evil. Decisions in accord with Satan makes him Secondary Cause in a person's life, but the individual is still personally responsible.)
 - 7. The First Advent itself was a testimony to a magnitude of evil decisions that actually played into God's Redemptive work.**
- R. At the center of the Angelic Conflict is the relationship between the Sovereignty of God and the Volition of mankind and angels.**
- 1. Sovereignty comes from the concept of Rulership/Kingship. Deut 4:39** Know therefore today, and take it to your heart, that the Lord, He is God in heaven above and on the earth below, there is no other. **1 Chr 29:11-12** Yours, O Lord, is the greatness and the power and the glory and the victory and the majesty, indeed everything that is in the heavens and the earth; Yours is the dominion, O Lord, and You do exalt Thyself as head over all. **Rev 19:16** King of kings and Lord of lords.
 - 2. Rulers pronounce decrees, make statutes and give commands. Esther 2:8; 3:15; 4:3 et al**
 - 3. Obedience requires compliance with the authority's commands and thus involves choices. Gen 3:1-7**
 - 4. Judgments in the form of punishment are prescribed and rendered for commands not obeyed. Dan 3:8-12**
For this reason at that time certain Chaldeans came forward and brought charges against the Jews. 9 They responded and said to Nebuchadnezzar the king: "O king, live forever! 10 "You yourself, O king, have made a

decree that every man who hears the sound of the horn, flute, lyre, trigon, psaltery, and bagpipe, and all kinds of music, is to fall down and worship the golden image. 11 "But whoever does not fall down and worship shall be cast into the midst of a furnace of blazing fire. 12 "There are certain Jews whom you have appointed over the administration of the province of Babylon, namely Shadrach, Meshach and Abed-nego. These men, O king, have disregarded you; they do not serve your gods or worship the golden image which you have set up." **John 3:36** "He who believes in the Son has eternal life; but he who does not obey the Son will not see life, but the wrath of God abides on him."

5. **When a Volitional Creature is not involved, the decree of God is fact. Gen 1:3-25**
6. **By decree, God made Volitional Creatures personally responsible for their decisions. Gen 2:16-17**
The Lord God commanded the man, saying, "From any tree of the garden you may eat freely; 17 but from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat, for in the day that you eat from it you will surely die."
Ezek 28:15 You were blameless in your ways From the day you were created Until unrighteousness was found in you.
7. **Throughout history many have misunderstood the relationship between God's Kingship (Sovereignty) and His Omnipotence. If God must force His love upon His creation (i.e. irresistible grace), the response is coerced and not real.**

11. The Fall Of Satan:

A. Background of his fall: Eze 28:12-15

1. Lamentation over the King of Tyre. Eze 28:12

“Son of man, (addresses Ezekiel, sometime around 575 B.C. as per Eze 26:1, 11 years into the Babylonian exile), take up a lamentation over the king of Tyre (compare Eze 28:2-10 where the “prince of Tyre” is addressed; this establishes a different ruler of Tyre; Ezekiel 27 is addressed to the nation as a whole; 28:1-10 to a human ruler as nothing in the passage cannot be literally fulfilled in ancient Tyre; that ruler will be broken by human means at the hands of a Gentile {28:10}), and say to him, ‘Thus says the Lord God, “You had the seal of perfection (Lit: You were the one sealing a pattern; pattern indicates a Plan in which things are made, here angels, according to the pattern of the King of Tyre; Satan was the prototype angel), Full of wisdom (Cf 28:3-4 where a similar statement is made of the prince/Tyre-this indicates that Satan was at the forefront of the knowledge that had been revealed by God. The “prince” was a self-pronounced “god” while this is a God given description.) and perfect in beauty (Cf 27:3 where the prince of Tyre claims this of himself).

- a. All other angels were created after the pattern of Satan.
- b. We know they are different in appearance and can change form so elements of the soul are more in view.
- c. He was at the forefront of knowledge and understanding concerning God.
- d. His appearance was the definition of beauty.
- e. Note: there are obvious parallels between the Prince of Tyre and the King of Tyre, who is Satan himself. The leader of Tyre from 591-573 B.C. was Eshbaal III. He was followed by Baal II from 573-564 B.C.

2. The King’s Location. Eze 28:13.

You were in Eden, the garden of God (This does not seem to refer to the earthly Garden of Eden of Genesis 2:8-9 because the earthly garden was “planted” by God indicating the initial activity; rather it appears to deal with an Eden in existence on the day Satan was created as per the last of this verse; this seems to refer to a heavenly Eden that is similar to the New Jerusalem described in Rev 22:1-9; also compare 28:17 where he was “cast to the earth;” the Millennium will be similar to Eden {Isa 51:3}; this clearly displays similar circumstances between the Fall of Man and the Fall of Satan; the human ruler of Tyre never visited Eden, no matter where it was located). Every precious stone was your covering: The ruby, the topaz, and the diamond; The beryl, the onyx, and the jasper; The lapis lazuli, the turquoise, and the emerald; And the gold, the workmanship of your tambourines and flutes (corrected), Was in you (with). On the day that

you were created (Bara') They were prepared (Pulal PF KONAN = had been prepared; Pulal is intensive passive, Perfect is completed action)

- a. Satan's original habitat was similar to the Garden of Eden.
- b. It was prepared beforehand for him and those created out of nothing in his pattern.
- c. His position was marked with overt wealth.
- d. The function of flutes and tambourines was to lead in the praise of God. 1 Sam 10:5 et al;

3. The King's Function. Eze 28:14

You were the anointed Cherub (MIMSHACH = 1x; verb 66x; to anoint and looks at consecration to an office or function; the word indicates a unique position) who covers (Qal Ptc sAKAK 22X; Compare the usages in Exodus 25:20; 37:9 where it is used of the wings of the Cherubim while covering or guarding the Ark; Lit: the one spreading a protective net/covering. The obvious question is "what was he protecting?" The only reasonable answer is "the Throne Room" of God. He is a king under The King, so he has a function. He was appointed to an office with the function of protection. The obvious question is, "against what?" The only reasonable answer is from, "apostasy and/or rejection of God's Word. This is an outgrowth of his description as being "full of wisdom.") And I (the Lord God) placed you (the King of Tyre) (there) (Divine appointment). You were on the (a) holy mountain of God; (a mountain denotes height; holy means "set apart," so it is a "set apart height," or the throne room of God; Satan was in charge); You (King of Tyre) walked in the midst of the stones of fire (Hithpael Perfect HALAK = to walk to and fro, referring to having the freedom to walk anywhere one wished; the stones are the precious stones which were just described; the fire denotes judgment; but it is a judgment for blessing here because he was at this time without sin; Satan seeks to regain this status Cf Dan 11:38, but not from God).

- a. Satan was appointed by God to the highest available position.
- b. He was to protect the throneroom.
- c. He had received vast wealth.
- d. He was a distributor of the wealth. Cf Eze 28:16

4. The King's Perfection. Eze 28:15

"You were blameless (TAMIYM = 91x; used of Noah in Gen 6:9; part of the call to Abraham in 17:1; used mostly of the animal sacrifices and translated "without blemish"; a picture of perfection in unfallen beings and maturity in fallen ones) in your ways from the day you were created (BARA' = made from nothing as in 28:13) until unrighteousness ('AYIL = used to describe injustice, partiality, taking a bribe) was found in you.

- a. Satan was not created in a fallen condition.

- b. When he fell he was spiritually mature, so it was a conscious decision with no valid plea of ignorance.
- c. He rejected God's gifts solely by his own choice. Cf 1 Cor 8:1
- d. He unjustly used the blessings from God.

B. Satan's Original Sin. Isa 14:12-14

1. The Result of Lucifer's Sin. Isa 14:12

"How you have fallen from heaven, O star of the morning, son of the dawn! You have been cut down to the earth, You who have weakened the nations!

- a. This verse states the results of what happened as a result of Isaiah 14:13-14 and Ezekiel 28:16-19.
- b. He is called "The Shining One" to denote his wisdom, beauty and position, from whence he has the name "Lucifer."
- c. His title "son of the daybreak" refers to him being the first angel created who "sealed a pattern."
- d. From his original position and status insight is gleaned about his function and method of operation after his first fall.

2. The First Three "I will's." Isa 14:13

"But you said (you yourself – emphasizes personal Volition) in your heart (The center of activity referring to the place where thoughts are analyzed and decisions are made soul), "I will ascend to heaven (the heavens—indicates that he was on earth when this resolve was made; Ezekiel 28:16-19 indicates that he had access to earth before his fall and after; Satan sought to take over God's abode); "I will raise my throne above (MIMagaL = from above; from the top up {evolve}; he is already the highest ranking angel, beautiful, and a genius but was not content) the stars of God, (stars of EL; stars are used to refer to angels, such as in Rev 12:4 and Job 38:17; EL refers to God's Omnipotence. God knew what Satan was attempting to do. Satan obviously had enough information to know God's laws, principles and policies to the point that reasoned that God's Omnipotence would not directly intervene) and I will sit on the mount of assembly in the recesses of the north (This refers to Mount Olympus located in Northern Greece which is the supposed mountain of the gods. Mythology claims this is where they met to choose a course of action. This verse is speaking to the people of Isaiah's day and is giving them the essence of Satan's rebellious statements. Here Satan claims that he is a god of gods and can gain control of creation to direct its course).

- a. Satan's intellect and free will made these resolutions.
- b. He makes them during a visit to earth.
- c. He sought to take over the Throneroom of God, not just to serve in it.
- d. He was not satisfied with his position as the highest ranking angel and became greedy. Ex 20:17 You shall not covet...

- e. Satan's "wisdom" determined that the Omnipotent God would not directly intervene. Wisdom refers to the use of knowledge and normally it implies righteous use, but not always.
 - f. Satan believed that he could become a god.
 - g. And he would offer "his" godhood to other angels over which he would rule. (mount of assembly member)
3. **Two More "I Wills." Isa 14:14**
 "I will ascend above the heights of the clouds (gABH used of Divine transportation as in Psa 104:3 {He makes the clouds His chariots}; Isaiah 19:1 indicates he will try to command them like the Lord. Isaiah 5:6 indicates he will try to control the environment; it also looks at the Ante-Diluvian cloud mass as being restored from the earth before Satan fell); I will make myself (MAMAH compare myself with) like the Most High. (ELYON used of both Yahweh {Psa 7:17; 9:2} and Elohim {Psa 50:14; 57:2})
- a. Satan sought to usurp God's control over transportation, power and the environment.
 - b. He sought to usurp the authority and position of the Godhead.
 - c. He thought that he could attain to a sufficient degree of Divine Essence to be considered a god.
 - d. He realized that he was not yet a god, but was seeking to become godlike, so he is the author of evolution.
 - f. Instead of serving God per his appointment, he desired to be served.
4. **There was a stated law against such activity because it is called "sin." Rom 4:15**
 for the Law brings about wrath, but where there is no law, neither is there violation. **Rom 5:13-14** for until the Law sin was in the world; but sin is not imputed when there is no law. **Eze 28:16** and you sinned; **compare Isa 46:9** Remember the former things long past (before fall of Satan), For I am God and there is no other, I am God and there is no one like Me.
5. **God does not use differing standards of righteousness. Deut 32:4**
 "The Rock! His work is perfect, For all His ways are just; A God of faithfulness and without injustice, Righteous and upright is He. **Jer 2:5** Thus says the Lord, "What injustice did your fathers find in Me, That they went far from Me And walked after emptiness and became empty? **Rom 2:11-13** For there is no partiality with God. 12 For all who have sinned without the Law will also perish without the Law; and all who have sinned under the Law will be judged by the Law; **Rev 21:17-18** And he measured its wall, seventy-two yards, according to human measurements, which are also angelic measurements.

C. Satan's Method of Operation after his fall before the trial. Eze 28:16-19
 (This does not refer to the Prince of Tyre, but to the King of Tyre. Cf 28:1-11; this section is not a rehash of the first part of the chapter!!)

- 1. **His Program. Eze 28:16**

“By the abundance of your trade (**RIKULAH = 4x; merchandise; what he had to “sell.” He used his wealth and position to spread his lies**). You were internally filled with violence (**CHAMAs = violence, oppression, wrong as in a “false” witness; one of the main problems God addressed with the Flood in Noah’s time; Literal: “They have filled your midst with violence. “They” refers to “your ways” from verse 15. “Midst” refers to the position he held amidst the “stones of fire.”**), And you sinned (**Qal PF + wc CHAtA’ = became arrogant over his position, wanted more**); Therefore I have cast you as profane (**Piel IPF + w.c. CHALAL to profane as the sanctuary, bring down; defame and make common**) From the (**the one previously referred to**) mountain of God (**His position**). And I have destroyed you (**Piel IPF + w.c. ‘BHADH = to make perish or destroy; as per his position**), O Covering Cherub (**Cf verse 13**), from the midst of the stones of fire.

- a. **Historical Tyre was the illustration of using one’s position and wealth to spread lies. Eze 27:3-36**
- b. **He was not confined to the throneroom.**
(Cf "ways" or "paths")
- c. **Seeking to become still greater, he became arrogant and sinned. Isa 14:12-14**
- d. **His immediate judgment was loss of his position and heavenly wealth.**

2. The Causes of his Fall. Eze 28:17

Your heart was lifted up (**Qal Pf GABHAH lifted up; not a passive which would indicate a main cause, but an active which indicates volition; your heart lifted up**) because of your beauty (**Lit: in your beauty referring to the overt splendor and magnificence**); you corrupted your wisdom (**Piel PF SHACHAT = to corrupt by reason of your splendor; you were so taken with the former that you destroyed the latter**). I cast you to the ground (**upon the earth; another reason to view the Eden as heavenly**); I put you before kings that they may see you.

- a. **Satan let his position, overt beauty and wisdom become a source of arrogance.**
- b. **He focused on the splendor instead of wisdom based in righteousness and truth.**
- c. **This casting to the Earth would be immediately after his First Fall.**
- d. **The kings would refer to angelic ranks.**
- e. **This same type of thing will happen midway through the Tribulation. Rev 12:4-11**
- f. **And again when he is bound in Sheol. Rev 20:1-3; Isa 14:9-11**
- g. **The same type of thing happens to Prophetic Babylon.**
Jer 50-51; Rev 18

3. The Result of his Distortions. Eze 28:18

By the multitude of your iniquities (**gAWEN** – basic meaning to twist or distort/bend; hence twisting or distorting a law or precept), in the unrighteousness of your trade (same word here as in verse 15 **gAWEL** only here is masculine; 20X; notice the plural used here; Satan's Original Sin is included, that of arrogance; but other sins are referred to as well; used of the sin of differing weights Lev 19:15, 35; i.e. in the distribution of wealth; also Deut 25:16 ; plunder of a friend Psa 7:3-4; of those who say there is no god; Psa 53:1; Of a wicked judge Psa 82:2; remember that God does not use differing weights Deut 32:4), You profaned (**Piel PF CHALaL** = intensive) your sanctuaries (sacred places; notice here "your" that which you were given charge over; word is normally used in Piel; + **MIQDoSh** in plural holy places; used of the Tabernacle in Exo 25:8; Lev 16:13 et al, specifically of the PH and MHP which represent Php 2 & 3; Psa 58:35 refers to the sanctuary of the heavens as well as Psa 96:6; what Satan profaned.)

- a. After Satan's Original Sin of arrogance, he was permitted to spread his lies.
 - b. His original sin led to a multitude of other sins:
 - 1) He bent and twisted and hence distorted God's Essence.
 - 2) Because it is called "sin" there was the clear violation of a law. Cf Rom 4:15; 5:13
 - 3) He distributed wealth with partiality that was based on unjust standards.
4. **His Demise. Eze 28:19.**
 "All who know you among the peoples Are appalled at you; You have become terrified, And you will be no more.""
- a. This looks at the judgmental decision rendered by God.
 - b. And the final destiny of Satan.
5. **Conclusion: Satan was had the opportunity to spread his leaven to all angels BEFORE Divine Intervention occurred.**

12. The Fall Of Angels.

- A. **The commonly accepted view is that One-Third of the angels fell. Rev 12:4**
And his tail is dragging a third of the stars of the heaven and threw them to the earth. And the dragon had stood before the woman who was going to give birth, so that when she may give birth he might devour her child.
1. **This verse provides a clue to how many chose to side with Satan.**
 2. **It does not exclude another possibility, that all the angels fell.**
- B. **Angelic laws had to be in existence before the Fall of Satan. Eze 28:16**
And you sinned; Cf Rom 5:13 but sin is not imputed when there is no law.
- C. **Some obvious laws:**
1. **There is only one true God. John 5:44**
"How can you believe, when you receive glory from one another and you do not seek the glory that is from the one and only God? **John 17:3** This is eternal life, that they may know You, the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom You have sent.
 2. **He is the Supreme Authority. Isa 14:12-14**
 3. **There shall be no distortion of truth about the God. Exo 20:7**
You shall not take the name of the Lord your God in vain, for the Lord will not leave him unpunished who takes His name in vain. **Cf Isa 14:12-14**
 4. **There shall be no lies. John 8:44**
You are of your father the devil, and you want to do the desires of your father. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth because there is no truth in him. Whenever he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own nature, for he is a liar and the father of lies.
 5. **There shall be no oppression of those under one's authority. Eze 28:16** "By the abundance of your trade You were internally filled with violence (**CHAMAs = violence, oppression, wrong as in a "false" witness**), And you sinned; (**Oppression is unjust pressure.**)
 6. **Grace should be recognized as the foundation of one's existence. Exo 20:8-10**
"Remember the sabbath day, to keep it holy. 9 "Six days you shall labor and do all your work, 10 but the seventh day is a sabbath of the Lord your God; in it you shall not do any work, you or your son or your daughter, your male or your female servant or your cattle or your sojourner who stays with you.
 7. **There shall be no theft. Ex 20:15-17**
You shall not steal. 16 "You shall not bear false witness against your neighbor. 17 "You shall not covet your neighbor's house; you shall not covet your neighbor's wife or his male servant or his female servant or his ox or his donkey or anything that belongs to your neighbor." **Cf Eze 28:16; Cf Isa 14:12-14**

- D. Satan was permitted to spread his leaven before his trial, which provides a scenario in which all angels could fall. Eze 28:16**
 "By the abundance of your trade You were internally filled with violence
- E. His position and function enhanced the possibility:**
- 1. He was the highest ranking angel and thus had the opportunity to abuse his position. Eze 28:14 (anointed Cherub)**
 - 2. It appears that he was the Angelic High Priest, which would make him the chief communicator of God's instructions.**
 You profaned (Piel PF CHALaL = intensive) your sanctuaries (sacred places; notice here "your" that which you were given charge over; word is normally used in Piel; + MIQDoSh in plural holy places; used of the Tabernacle in Exo 25:8; Lev 16:13 et al, specifically of the PH and MHP which represent Php 2 & 3; Psa 58:35 refers to the sanctuary of the heavens as well as Psa 96:6; what Satan profaned.)
 - 3. His was to protect against violation of the Angelic Laws, so he would not immediately be suspected of personal violation. Eze 28:14. (Qal Ptc sAKAK 22X; Compare the usages in Exodus 25:20; 37:9 where it is used of the wings of the Cherubim while covering or guarding the Ark; used in Exo 33:22 of God "covering" Moses with His hand as He passed by; Psa 91:4 where God "covers" us with His feathers and wings; Lit: the one spreading a protective net/covering. The obvious question is "what was he protecting?" The only reasonable answer is "the Throne Room" of God. He is a king under The King, so he has a function. He was appointed to an office with the function of protection. The obvious question is, "against what?" The only reasonable answer is from, "apostasy and/or rejection of God's Word. This is an outgrowth of his description as being "full of wisdom.")**
 - 4. As an intellectual genius he was able to determine how to deceive others. Eze 28:12 Full of wisdom and perfect in beauty. Cf Rev 12:9 And the great dragon was thrown down, the serpent of old who is called the devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; he was thrown down to the earth, and his angels were thrown down with him.**
- F. The Implementation of Satan's Plan, termed Evil 1.**
- 1. He had sinned and was not dead. Isa 14:12-14 cf Eze 28:16**
 - 2. God's wealth was misused to achieve selfish ends. Eze 28:16**
 "By the abundance of your trade
 - 3. He realized that as God's spokesman, his words would be readily received since no untruth existed before him. John 8:44**
 You are of your father the devil, and you want to do the desires of your father. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth because there is no truth in him. Whenever he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own nature, for he is a liar and the father of lies.

4. **So he assumed his first disguise to deceive others, as a messenger of truth to hide the lie that he was no longer a messenger of truth. 2 Cor 11:13-15**
 For such men are false apostles, deceitful workers, disguising themselves as apostles of Christ. 14 No wonder, for even Satan disguises himself as an angel of light. 15 Therefore it is not surprising if his servants also disguise themselves as servants of righteousness, whose end will be according to their deeds. **2 Cor 11:3** But I am afraid that, as the serpent deceived Eve by his craftiness, your minds will be led astray from the simplicity and purity of devotion to Christ.
5. **From the Truth he previously received, he must have arrived at the conclusion that God's Omnipotence would not immediately eliminate him, or his plan probably would have been abandoned.**
 - a. **He probably knew of Everlasting Life, hence, a promise of not being eliminated.**
 - b. **He would know of God's Love as an Attribute of His Essence, since it is basically "The Divine Decree."**
 - c. **He would know of His Righteousness and Justice, because there existed laws of conduct. Eze 28:15-16**
 - d. **These three statements of truth could be distorted to the point that he reasoned he might have a chance at godhood. Isa 14:12-14**
6. **His plan was then activated. Eze 28:16-19**
7. **Satan's major lie throughout human history is that one can become a god, so the question is whether or not he used it on angels, like we know he did on mankind? Gen 3:5**
8. **The reasoning that he offered godhood to angels:**
 - a. **God did not make other gods. Deut 32:39**
 I am He and there is no god besides Me.
 - b. **Yet there are self-proclaimed gods and those who have been proclaimed god by volitional creation. Deut 4:19**
 And beware not to lift up your eyes to heaven and see the sun and the moon and the stars, all the host of heaven, and be drawn away and worship them and serve them, those which the Lord your God has allotted to all the peoples under the whole heaven. **Amos 5:25-26** Did you present Me with sacrifices and grain offerings in the wilderness for forty years, O house of Israel? 26 "You also carried along Sikkuth your king and Kiyyun, your images, the star of your gods which you made for yourselves. **Acts 7:43** For even if there are ones calling themselves gods whether in heaven or on earth, as indeed there are many gods and many lords, yet for us there is but one God. **1 Cor 8:5-6** For even if there are so-called gods whether in heaven or on earth, as indeed there are many gods and many lords, 6 yet for us there is but one God, the Father, from whom are all things and we exist for Him; and one Lord, Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we exist through Him.

- c. **The thought of becoming godlike originated with Satan. Isa 14:14 I will compare myself with the Most High**
9. **If he followed the revealed pattern as shown in the Garden of Eden, he would claim that knowledge of another system of good and the opposite of truth was essential to become a god, as it is required of Omniscience. Gen 3:5, Cf Eze 28:16 Cf 2-6 (which sets up a parallel between the fall of the Prince of Tyre with the King of Tyre; the claim of godhood by the King of Babylon is in Isa 14:12-14)**
 10. **The major distortion would be that one must experience evil to become a god. Gen 3:5**
 11. **He would then reveal that he had become a god, as evidenced by his very existence.**
 12. **From his position and function, deception of the masses would have been very easy.**
(High Priest, in charge of wealth, protector against evil – this is the first instance of creatures getting their eyes off truth and on a being. It appears that he was like Adam and the bulk of angels like Eve-deceived.)
 13. **As a deceiver, cloaked in his “angel of light” disguise, he would claim to be speaking for God and delivering His Directive Will. 2 Cor 11:13-15**

G. The evidence points to the fall of all angels:

1. **All things in heaven and on earth need reconciliation to Christ. Col 1:13-20**
For He rescued us from the domain of darkness, and transferred us to the kingdom of His beloved Son, 14 in whom we have redemption, the forgiveness of sins. 15 He is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of all creation. 16 For by Him all things were created, both in the heavens and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or rulers or authorities — all things have been created through Him and for Him. 17 He is before all things, and in Him all things hold together. 18 He is also head of the body, the church; and He is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead, so that He Himself will come to have first place in everything. 19 For it was the Father's good pleasure for all the fullness to dwell in Him, 20 and through Him to reconcile **(Aor Act Inf APOKATALASSW = 3X; to reconcile; to change {ALASSW}, based on a standard {KATA} and move away from (APO); verse 22 and Eph 2:14-16 = For He Himself is our peace, who made both groups into one, and broke down the barrier of the dividing wall, 15 by abolishing in His flesh the enmity, which is the Law of commandments contained in ordinances, that in Himself He might make the two into one new man, thus establishing peace, 16 and might reconcile them both in one body to God through the cross, by it having put to death the enmity.)** all things to Himself, having made peace through the blood of His cross; through Him, I say, whether things on earth or things in heaven.
2. **Only Jesus Christ is forever “experientially holy.” Rev 15:4**

(Tribulational martyrs make this statement) “Who will never fear, O Lord (**KURIOS**), and glorify Your Name? For you (**KURIOS**) alone (**MONOS = to the exclusion of all others**) are (**HOSIOS = adjective; to be experientially holy**) experientially holy.”

- a. **This is based on the Greek word HOSIOS, which is translated "Holy," although it differs from HAGIOS which is also translated “holy.”**
- b. **Its usages let us determine how it differs from HAGIOS which means “set apart.”**
3. **HOSIOS is used eight times in Scripture and along with the word "only" in Revelation 15:4 points us to the absolute uniqueness of Jesus Christ.**
 - a. **Of His person in the flesh. Acts 2:27** Because Thou wilt not abandon my soul to Hades, Nor allow Thy **Holy** One to undergo decay. **Acts 13:35** "Therefore He also says in another Psalm, 'Thou wilt not allow Thy **Holy** One to undergo decay.'
 - b. **Of His qualifications as High Priest. Heb 7:26**
For it was fitting that we should have such a high priest, **holy**, innocent, undefiled, separated from sinners and exalted above the heavens;
4. **The conclusion that Jesus Christ alone is the only one to remain experientially holy is demonstrated by the fact that man is expected to live a holy life, thus to become experientially holy. It is to be a “doer” of God’s word rather than just a “hearer.”**
 - a. **Experiential holiness is a qualification for a Pastor. Titus 1:7-8**
For the overseer must be above reproach as God's steward, not self-willed, not quick-tempered, not addicted to wine, not pugnacious, not fond of sordid gain, 8 but hospitable, loving what is good, sensible, just, **devout**, self-controlled,
 - b. **It is a prerequisite for prayer. 1 Tim 2:8**
Therefore I want the men in every place to pray, lifting up **holy** hands, without wrath and dissension.
 - c. **It should be the Believer's testimony. 1 Thes 2:10**
You are witnesses, and so is God, how devoutly (**HOSIWS = adverb used 1x**) and uprightly and blamelessly we behaved toward you believers;
 - d. **It should be a Believer’s objective. Luke 1:75**
To grant us that we, being delivered from the hand of our enemies, Might serve Him without fear, 75 In holiness (**HOSIOT8S = noun used 2x cf Eph 4:24**) and righteousness before Him all our days.
 - e. **It is a desired result of the Believer’s "New Self." Eph 4:24**
But you did not learn Christ in this way, 21 if indeed you have heard Him and have been taught in Him, just as truth is in Jesus, 22 that, in reference to your former manner of life, you lay aside the old self, which is being corrupted in accordance with the lusts of deceit, 23 and that you be renewed in the spirit of your mind, 24 and put on

the new self, which in the likeness of God has been created in righteousness and holiness (**HOSIOT8S**) of the truth.

- f. **It is guaranteed blessings because of the resurrection of the only “Experientially Holy One.” Acts 13:34**

"And as for the fact that He raised Him up from the dead, no more to return to decay, He has spoken in this way: 'I will give you the **holy** and sure blessings of David.'

- 5. **Tribulational martyrs make the statement of Christ’s unique holiness in Revelation 15:4. In Revelation 16:5, an angel used the definite article with HOSIOS to say exactly the same thing.** “And I heard the angel of the waters saying, ‘Righteous are You who keeps on being and who kept on being, The (**HO HOSIOS = this is known as a “definite article of previous reference,”** which is used to refer to something recently stated. It is clearly identified by the technical word HOSIOS that it is connected to. Thus it picks up the fact of His unique holiness.) Experientially Holy One, because You did execute judgment on these things” (**The judgment executed reminds us that He remained “experientially holy.”**)
- 6. **Conclusion: no angel or man (except Jesus Christ) remained experientially holy, thus all fell.**

- H. **The descriptive terms, "elect" and "holy," even without other evidence, imply that salvation could have been offered.**

- 1. **Only once are any angels called “elect.” 1 Tim 5:21**

I solemnly charge you in the presence of God and of Christ Jesus and of His chosen (**elect**) angels, to maintain these principles without bias, doing nothing in a spirit of partiality.

- 2. **Only once in the Old Testament are “holy angels” mentioned. Dan 4:8-27**

- 3. **Three times “holy angels” are mentioned in the New Testament.**

- a. **They will be present when the Son of Man returns in glory. Luke 9:26**

For whoever is ashamed of Me and My words, the Son of Man will be ashamed of him when He comes in His glory, and the glory of the Father and of the holy angels.

- b. **They were seen once to carry an important message. Acts 10:22**

They said, "Cornelius, a centurion, a righteous and God-fearing man well spoken of by the entire nation of the Jews, was divinely directed by a holy angel to send for you to come to his house and hear a message from you."

- c. **They will witness the judgment on those who take the “Mark of the Beast.” Rev 14:9-10**

Then another angel, a third one, followed them, saying with a loud voice, "If anyone worships the beast and his image, and receives a mark on his forehead or on his hand, 10 he also will drink of the

wine of the wrath of God, which is mixed in full strength in the cup of His anger; and he will be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels and in the presence of the Lamb.

4. Not even the “stars” are “morally pure” in His sight. Job 15:14-15

"What is man, that he should be pure, Or he who is born of a woman, that he should be righteous? 15 "Behold, He puts no trust in His holy ones, And the heavens are not pure (**zAKAK = morally spotless, clean, pure**) in His sight; **Job 25:2-6** 2 "Dominion and awe belong to Him Who establishes peace in His heights. 3 "Is there any number to His troops? And upon whom does His light not rise? 4 "How then can a man be just with God? Or how can he be clean who is born of woman? 5 "If even the moon has no brightness And the stars are not pure (**zAKAK = morally spotless, clean, pure**), in His sight, 6 How much less man, that maggot, And the son of man, that worm!"

I. Other clues are seen by reason of the angel’s intense interest in salvation:

1. No angel was qualified to execute the judgments of the Tribulation apart from Jesus Christ, and He was worthy because of His perfect sacrifice.

Rev 5:3 And no one in heaven (**includes angels**), or on the earth (**alive in Tribulation**) or under the earth (**Believers not yet Resurrected**), was able to open the book, or to look into it. **Cf Rev 5:9-10** And they (**Universal church**) sang a new song, saying, “Worthy are you to take the book and to open the seals; for You have been slain (**offered as a sacrifice**) and did purchase for God men from every tribe and tongue and people and nation. 10 "You have made them to be a kingdom and priests to our God; and they will reign upon the earth." **Cf Rev 5:11 (angels join the song of redemption/salvation)** And I looked and heard the voice of many angels enshrouding the throne and the living creatures and the elders; and the number of them was myriads of myriads and thousands of thousands, 12 saying with a loud voice. “Worthy is the Lamb, the One who was slain to receive the power and riches and wisdom and might and honor and glory and blessing.” **Cf Rev 5:13** And every created thing which is in heaven and on the earth and under the earth and on the sea, and all things in them, I heard saying, "To Him who sits on the throne, and to the Lamb, be blessing and honor and glory and dominion forever and ever." (**creation’s song that does not include men or angels does not include a reference to salvation.**)

2. A stronger reference is found in Revelation 7. Rev 7:9-12

After these things I looked, and behold, a great multitude which no one could count, from every nation and all tribes and peoples and tongues, standing before the throne and before the Lamb, clothed in white robes, and palm branches were in their hands; 10 and they (**Great Tribulation martyrs**) are crying out with a loud voice, saying, “**(The, not “our”)** Salvation is to our God who sits on the throne and to the Lamb” 11 And all the angels were standing around the throne and around the elders and

the four living creatures; and they fell on their faces before the throne and worshiped God, Cf 7:12 saying **(angels are included from verse 11), "Amen" (an "amen" in response to another's statement indicates agreement with what has just been said, "The" Salvation. Notice that "all" the angels were standing around the throne saying the "Amen.")** blessing and glory and wisdom and thanksgiving and honor and power and might, be to our God forever and ever. Amen."

3. The Plan of Salvation was graphically presented in heaven before any man was there. Ezek 1:4-10

As I looked, behold, a storm wind was coming from the north, a great cloud with fire flashing forth continually and a bright light around it, and in its midst something like glowing metal in the midst of the fire. 5 Within it there were figures resembling four living beings. And this was their appearance: they had human form. 6 Each of them had four faces and four wings. 7 Their legs were straight and their feet were like a calf's hoof, and they gleamed like burnished bronze. 8 Under their wings on their four sides were human hands. As for the faces and wings of the four of them, 9 their wings touched one another; their faces did not turn when they moved, each went straight forward. 10 As for the form of their faces, each had the face of a man **(humanity)**; all four had the face of a lion **(of tribe of Judah)** on the right and the face of a bull **(sacrifice)** on the left, and all four had the face of an eagle **(Protector and Deliverer, Exo 19:4; Rev 12:14). Ezek 10:14-15** And each one had four faces. The first face was the face of a cherub, the second face was the face of a man, the third the face of a lion, and the fourth the face of an eagle. 15 Then the cherubim rose up. They are the living beings that I saw by the river Chebar.

4. No one in the heavenlies compares to Christ. Psalms 89:5-8

And the heavens will praise Your wonders, O Lord; Your faithfulness also in the assembly of the holy ones **(QADOSH = holy as of the "Holy One" of Israel; often used of the "saints" of God, the saved)**. For who in the heavens is comparable to the Lord? Who among the sons of the mighty is like the Lord, A God greatly feared in the council of the holy ones, And awesome **(worthy of fear)** above all those who are around Him? O Yahweh Elohim of armies, who is like You, O Mighty Lord? Your faithfulness also surrounds You.

5. Hence the need for Christ to "reconcile all things to Himself." Col 1:16 Cf 20

13. The Trial Of Satan and Appeal:

- A. Evidence indicates that God judges each creature individually and since Satan was the instigator, he would be the first to be placed on trial, which would establish a precedent. Rev 20:11-15**

And I saw a great white throne and Him who sat upon it, from whose presence earth and heaven fled away, and no place was found for them. 12 And I saw the dead, the great and the small, standing before the throne, and books were opened; and another book was opened, which is the book of life; and the dead were judged from the things which were written in the books, according to their deeds. 13 And the sea gave up the dead which were in it, and death and Hades gave up the dead which were in them; and they were judged, every one of them according to their deeds. 14 And death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire. This is the second death, the lake of fire. 15 And if anyone's name was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire. **2 Cor 5:9-10** For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ, that each one may be recompensed for his deeds in the body, according to what he has done, whether good or bad.

- B. Satan was put on trial for his sins, all of which man can duplicate. Ezek 28:16-18**

"By the abundance of your trade, You were internally filled with violence, And you sinned; Therefore I have cast you as profane, From the mountain of God. And I have destroyed you, O covering cherub, From the midst of the stones of fire. 17 "Your heart was lifted up because of your beauty; You corrupted your wisdom by reason of your splendor. I cast you to the ground; I put you before kings, That they may see you. 18 "By the multitude of your iniquities, In the unrighteousness of your trade, You profaned your sanctuaries. Therefore I have brought fire from the midst of you; It has consumed you, And I have turned you to ashes on the earth, In the eyes of all who see you.

- C. He was found guilty and his sentence was eternity in the Lake of Fire. John 16:11** The ruler of this world has been judged. **(Perf Passive Indicative KRINW = Perfect shows completed action; Passive indicates receiving judgment from someone else; Indicative is historical fact) Cf Matt 25:41** into the eternal fire which has been prepared for the devil and his angels.

- D. God, as the Righteous Judge, would declare the laws Satan violated, as per the ancient law that accusers are to personally confront the accused. In doing this notice that the truth would again be presented. Acts 25:15-16 (I think this would be classed as a "televised" trial)**

"And I answered them that it is not the custom of the Romans to hand over any man before the accused meets his accusers face to face, and has an opportunity to make his defense against the charges.

- E. **By reviewing the violated laws, all angels could easily realize that they too stood condemned for following their leader away from God. Satan's genius would easily seize upon this fact. Although it appears that most would have unconsciously violated God's laws, they would realize that they were no longer experientially righteous, like Eve.**

Job 4:17-19 (Eliphaz speaking.)

'Can mankind be just before God? Can a man be pure before his Maker? 18 'He puts no trust even in His servants; And against His (**notice the word "His"**) angels He charges (**Qal IFP SIYM = 584x; to set, place, charge**) error (**TAH^eLAH = 1x; error; DBL = have a capacity for a lack of understanding and so capable of being deceived and behave in error**). 19 'How much more those who dwell in houses of clay, Whose foundation is in the dust, Who are crushed before the moth!

- F. **The principle of the "Second Witness" should be considered. Had there been Unfallen Angels, they could have testified against Satan. God could have called them as witnesses to Satan's sin. They would have been evidence of personal choice existing in a living being. It is clear that something during this trial was of such a nature that a third party was needed or else everything else could have been handled in the Angelic realm. Deut 19:15-21**

"A single witness shall not rise up against a man on account of any iniquity or any sin which he has committed; on the evidence of two or three witnesses a matter shall be confirmed. 16 "If a malicious witness rises up against a man to accuse him of wrongdoing, 17 then both the men who have the dispute shall stand before the Lord, before the priests and the judges who will be in office in those days. 18 And the judges shall investigate thoroughly; and if the witness is a false witness and he has accused his brother falsely, 19 then you shall do to him just as he had intended to do to his brother. Thus you shall purge the evil from among you. 20 And the rest will hear and be afraid, and will never again do such an evil thing among you. 21 Thus you shall not show pity: life for life, eye for eye, tooth for tooth, hand for hand, foot for foot.

- G. **Satan filed a lawsuit against God, thus an appeal. 1 Pet 5:8**

Be spiritually sober, be spiritually wake. Your adversary (**HO ANTIDIKOS opponent in a lawsuit**), the Devil, keeps on walking about like a roaring lion seeking someone to drink down. (**Man got involved**)

1. **In a condemned state, Satan put his "wisdom" to work to try and protect himself. John 8:44**

"You are of your father the devil, and you want to do the desires of your father. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth, because there is no truth in him. Whenever he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own nature; for he is a liar, and the father of lies.

2. **From his Original Sin (Isa 14:12-14 arrogance) and his subsequent sins (Eze 28:16), it is easy to extrapolate his accusations against God.**

- H. **Satanic reasoning would be key to his defense, such as:**
1. **If God condemns all of them, then He is not Love and if He doesn't He is not Righteous.**
 2. **If God doesn't condemn all then He was not truthful about judgment for sin. If judgments were not specified, the God was unfair.**
 3. **He could easily conclude that God wouldn't condemn all of them to separation from Him (death), because He created them to have a love relationship.**
 4. **He could claim that he won by majority vote.**
 5. **He could claim that it is God's word against theirs.**
 6. **He could have "reasoned" that he had God in a no-win situation that couldn't be won without compromising His declared character.**
(Satan could easily be thinking "Ha, Ha, I've got you now God," and was probably looking forward to his trial to present his case for godhood)
- I. **At this point, God could have offered forgiveness of their sins, which is His prerogative as King and compatible with Mercy and Grace. Mark 2:1-12 & Luke 5:18-26**
- And behold, some men were carrying on a bed a man who was paralyzed; and they were trying to bring him in, and to set him down in front of Him. 19 And not finding any way to bring him in because of the crowd, they went up on the roof and let him down through the tiles with his stretcher, right in the center, in front of Jesus. 20 And seeing their faith, He said, "Friend, your sins are forgiven you." 21 And the scribes and the Pharisees began to reason, saying, "Who is this man who speaks blasphemies? Who can forgive sins, but God alone?" 22 But Jesus, aware of their reasonings, answered and said to them, "Why are you reasoning in your hearts? 23 "Which is easier, to say, 'Your sins have been forgiven you,' or to say, 'Rise and walk'? 24 "But in order that you may know that the Son of Man has authority on earth to forgive sins," He said to the paralytic, "I say to you, rise, and take up your stretcher and go home." 25 And at once he rose up before them, and took up what he had been lying on, and went home, glorifying God. 26 And they were all seized with astonishment and began glorifying God; and they were filled with fear, saying, "We have seen remarkable things today."
1. **Forgiveness is a right God has always possessed as part of His Goodness (Grace). Psa 86:5** for You, Lord, are good, and ready to forgive. **Neh 9:17** a God of forgiveness. **Exo 34:7** who keeps loyalty for thousands, who forgives iniquity (**AWEN**), transgression (**PESHA'**) and sin (**CHATA'**).
 2. **This right is designed to lead people to Godly fear. Psa 130:3**
If You, Lord should mark iniquities, O Lord who could stand? But there is forgiveness with You, That You may be feared.
- J. **With an offer of forgiveness from God, Satan would focus on Divine Attributes that would immediately come into view, namely Love, Righteousness and Justice. Satan would challenge God with questions:**

1. "How can a loving God cast His creatures into a lake of fire?"
2. "How can Love, Righteousness and Justice be compatible with each other?"
3. "Doesn't forgiveness violate Righteousness and Justice?"
4. "Doesn't forgiveness prove God is not Unchanging?"

K. Satan would argue:

1. **Any offer of forgiveness is incompatible with Divine Essence.**
(If there were no offer of salvation, many of these attacks would still apply)
2. **God's Kingship and the Volition of creatures are incompatible, claiming that God cannot be absolute King if the creature controls its own destiny through Volition.**
3. **God's Omniscience is a Primary Cause of all decisions, and since God would know that Satan would fall before He was created , by creating him caused him to fall.**
 - A. If God did not know he would fall, then He was not Omniscient.
 - B. If He did not truly foreknow all possible and actual decisions then He was not Omniscient.
 - C. If God did know and let it happen, then God is Evil and not Righteous.
4. **His environment was imperfect, claiming:**
 - A. No creature can rule without falling, including You.
 - B. His position was too much for any creature to handle.
 - C. His environment was not perfect, because he sinned in it and since God created an imperfect environment, He was not perfect.
5. **God's Omnipotence could not be used forever in a manner compatible with the rest of His Essence and policy, thus opening the possibility in his mind that he could be as powerful as God.**
(i.e. You could not use it on me when I sinned and therefore You do not actually possess it-bluff)
6. **God was not Omnipresent since He was unaware of Satan's plans until it was implemented.**
7. **God was not telling the truth, thus attacking His Veracity.**
8. **Death is incompatible with eternal life, and since God has lied (in Satan's reasoning), He too must die, which He cannot if He is eternal life.** (Remember: he had to know of everlasting life to even consider pursuing his course of action)
9. **God is as worthy of "death" as he.**

L. These attacks are seen in Satan's titles:

1. "Satan," which means "adversary" or "enemy." Rev 12:9
2. The "Devil," which means the "slanderer" or "accuser." Rev 12:9
3. "Abaddon" and "Apollyon," which means "destroyer" and refers to what his lies produce. Rev 9:11
4. "Beelzebub," which means "lord of the demons." Matt 12:24

5. **“Belial,” which means “worthless.” 2 Cor 6:15**
 6. **The “Dragon” indicating his politics. Rev 12:9**
 7. **The “Evil One,” referring to his practice. Matt 13:19,38**
 8. **The “Father of Lies” referring to his methods of communication. John 8:44**
 9. **The “Serpent” indicating his deceit. 2 Cor 11:3; Rev 12:9**
 10. **The “Temptor” indicating his methods of operation. Matt 4:3; 1 Thes 3:5**
- M. Satan basically claimed that they were creatures condemned from creation, and since they were thus created condemned there is no way to ever approach God due to His Righteousness and Justice, if He is indeed Righteous and Just.**
- N. At this point, with the Truth having been presented again by God and Satan's charges against God declared, God would offer salvation to those who would change their mind and believe that the penalty for sin could be paid without compromise of His Essence.**
1. **This would include the statement that God would display beings and circumstances that would fit Satan's charges.**
 - a. **They would be condemned from their start. Rom 5:12-14**
Therefore, just as through one man sin entered into the world, and death through sin, and so death spread to all men, because all sinned — 13 for until the Law sin was in the world; but sin is not imputed when there is no law. 14 Nevertheless death reigned from Adam until Moses, even over those who had not sinned in the likeness of the offense of Adam, who is a type of Him who was to come.
 - b. **They would be in a fallen and thus hostile environment, one in which Satan would rule. John 16:11**
because the ruler of this world has been judged.
 2. **It would also include the offer to provide a Perfect Being that could and would pay the penalty for sin. Heb 2:9**
But we do see Him who has been made for a little while lower than the angels, namely, Jesus, because of the suffering of death crowned with glory and honor, that by the grace of God He might taste death for every one.

14. Angelic Salvation:

A. Introductory Comments:

1. **Some people reject any offer of Angelic Salvation, claiming:**
 - a. **The silence of Scripture with regard to a provision of salvation for Fallen Angels.**
 - b. **Sin originated with them, so there would be no offer.**
 - c. **Their sin was an "eternal sin." Mark 3:28-29**
"Truly I say to you, all sins shall be forgiven the sons of men, and whatever blasphemies they utter; 29 but whoever blasphemes against the Holy Spirit never has forgiveness, but is guilty of an eternal sin
 - d. **They sinned with a clearer intellect and fuller knowledge than mankind's.**
 - e. **Their incorporeal being aggravated their sin and made it analogous to man sinning against the Holy Spirit.**
 - f. **Hebrews 2:16 refutes Angelic Salvation.**
2. **These objections as well as some others will be dealt with.**
3. **Most of the objections raised to this part of the study stem from a lack of consideration for the stated extent of application.**
4. **Even devoted theologians tend to comprehend only a portion of the ramifications of Scriptural statements.**
5. **We will first analyze whether or not the possibility of Angelic Salvation is solely based on an "argument from silence."**
6. **The Analysis:**
 - a. **Verses which say that Christ paid the penalty for the sins of man do not specifically exclude angels. 1 John 2:1-2**
My little children, I am writing these things to you that you may not sin. And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous; 2 and He Himself is the propitiation for our sins; and not for ours only, but also for those of the whole world. **(The word "world" can clearly include angelic beings.)**
 - b. **Since no verse specifically excludes angels, that is also an "argument is from silence."**
 - c. **Hermeneutically, several verses include the possibility, so it is eisegesis to read "only" into them.**
 - d. **The position that angelic sins were never paid for is similar to the Calvinist position of "Limited Atonement," which states that He only paid for the sins of the "Elect." That tenet has been applied to the angelic creation in a similar manner. It is interesting that the "no salvation to angels" position has been assumed from the church fathers onward and that any suggestion is met with the label "heresy" or "false teaching."**
(I have searched all the early church fathers, Calvin, Luther, Wesley, Spurgeon et al., no one actually dealt it as even a possibility. This does not mean it is wrong but that it has not been

thoroughly investigated. It almost seems that those who hold to "Unconditional Election" would embrace the possibility of angelic salvation since some of them are called "elect." 1 Tim 5:21)

- e. **There is no verse that says there are "Unfallen Angels," or that there are angels who never sinned, rather it is an inference taken from Revelation 12:4.** (most commentators only deal with the fall of Satan and not the rest of the angels)
- f. **No verse says any angel remained perfect from its creation.**
- g. **No verse claims sinless existence for any angel, but rather that no being other than Jesus Christ has eternally existed without sin, namely "experientially righteous." Cf Rev 16:5 cf Job 25**
- h. **Just as the terms "holy" and "elect" angels cannot be used to prove Angelic Salvation, neither can they be used to prove those angels did not fall since both of these terms are used to describe fallen but redeemed mankind.**
- i. **Conclusion: no single verse clarifies the issue.**
- i. **Application: The solution must be found in applying other principles to the situation at hand.**

B. Satan himself gives the first clue of Angelic Salvation. Gen 3

- 1. **Satan's knowledge was acquired.**
- 2. **His temptations led to the fall of the Man and Woman. Gen 3:1-7**
- 3. **BEFORE the Lord offered them salvation, Satan being the new ruler of the world and the one obey, seemingly led them to believe they could save themselves. Gen 3:21 Cf 3:7 (Fig Leaves)**
- 4. **A reasonable inference is that Satan had a reasonable expectation of an offer of salvation from the penalty of sin to be made.**
(From where would he have gotten it????)
- 5. **Eve was deceived into falling. Gen 3:13 Cf 2 Cor 11:3**
But I am afraid, lest as the serpent deceived Eve by his craftiness, your minds should be led astray from the simplicity and purity of devotion to Christ.
- 6. **Adam consciously fell, as did Satan, knowing full well what he was doing. 1 Tim 2:14**
And it was not Adam who was deceived, but the woman being quite deceived, fell into transgression.
- 7. **The Fall of Angels easily fits these two categories, with the majority being deceived. Ezek 28:16-18**
"By the abundance of your trade, You were internally filled with violence, And you sinned; Therefore I have cast you as profane, From the mountain of God. And I have destroyed you, O covering cherub, From the midst of the stones of fire. 17 "Your heart was lifted up because of your beauty; You corrupted your wisdom by reason of your splendor. I cast you to the ground; I put you before kings, That they may see you. 18 "By the multitude of your iniquities, In the unrighteousness of your trade, You profaned your sanctuaries. Therefore I have brought fire from the midst of

you; It has consumed you, And I have turned you to ashes on the earth, In the eyes of all who see you.

8. **Salvation through the sacrifice of an innocent victim was immediately offered to the Man and Woman when the Lord charged them with sin. Gen 3:21**
And the Lord God made garments of skin for Adam and his wife, and clothed them.
9. **Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden were in identical spiritual circumstances as were the angels when tempted, so it is perfectly compatible with the Righteousness and Justice of God to have offered to angels what was offered Adam and Eve.**
10. **Sin originated with Satan (Isa 14:12-14) and was spread to other angels (Eze 28:16-18) from a place of perfect environment (Eze 28:12; Gen 2), exactly paralleling the events of the Garden of Eden with Adam and Eve.**
11. **This refutes the point which says that sin originated with them (1a) so there would be no offer. It didn't originate with "them," but with Satan (John 8:44) was spread to others who subsequently fell. An offer of salvation would be a suitable from an Omniscient God who would have foreknown all the events.**

C. Forgiveness was a part of the Divine Plan from Eternity Past. Isa 46:8-13

"Remember this, and be assured; Recall it to mind, you transgressors. 9 "Remember the former things long past, For I am God, and there is no other; I am God, and there is no one like Me, 10 Declaring the end from the beginning And from ancient times things which have not been done, Saying, 'My purpose will be established, And I will accomplish all My good pleasure'; 11 Calling a bird of prey from the east, The man of My purpose from a far country. Truly I have spoken; truly I will bring it to pass. I have planned it, surely I will do it. 12 "Listen to Me, you stubborn-minded, Who are far from righteousness. 13 "I bring near My righteousness, it is not far off; And My salvation will not delay. And I will grant salvation in Zion, And My glory for Israel.

1. **Only one sin is named by the Word of God to be unpardonable, that being rejection of the gospel within one's allotted time. Mark 3:28-29**
"Truly I say to you, all sins shall be forgiven the sons of men, and whatever blasphemies they utter; 29 but whoever blasphemes against the Holy Spirit never has forgiveness, but is guilty of an eternal sin" **& Matt 12:31-32** "Therefore I say to you, any sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven men, but blasphemy against the Spirit shall not be forgiven. 32 "And whoever shall speak a word against the Son of Man, it shall be forgiven him; but whoever shall speak against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be forgiven him, either in this age, or in the age to come. **& Luke 12:7-11**
"And I say to you, everyone who confesses Me before men, the Son of Man shall confess him also before the angels of God; 9 but he who denies Me before men shall be denied before the angels of God. 10 "And everyone who will speak a word against the Son of Man, it shall be

forgiven him; but he who blasphemes against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be forgiven him. **John 16:13-14** "But when He, the Spirit of truth, comes, He will guide you into all the truth; for He will not speak on His own initiative, but whatever He hears, He will speak; and He will disclose to you what is to come. 14 "He shall glorify Me; for He shall take of Mine, and shall disclose it to you. **1 John 5:10** The one who believes in the Son of God has the witness in himself; the one who does not believe God has made Him a liar, because he has not believed in the witness that God has borne concerning His Son.

2. **A serious question that begs an answer is “why would angels be exempted from an offer of forgiveness when Adam and Eve weren’t?”**
3. **To say that angels committed an eternal sin lacks any scriptural backing and denies the clear parallel of the Garden of Eden and the Garden of God. Ezek 28:12-13**
"Son of man, take up a lamentation over the king of Tyre, and say to him, 'Thus says the Lord God, "You had the seal of perfection, Full of wisdom and perfect in beauty. 13 "You were in Eden, the garden of God;
4. **The argument that “the sin they committed was an eternal sin,” indicates that one sin forever condemned them without any chance of forgiveness. This would appear to be unfair to offer forgiveness to Adam and Eve and not to angels.**
5. **That argument would also make God appear hypocritical in that He commands mankind to forgive but He is exempt. Luke 17:3-4**
"Be on your guard! If your brother sins, rebuke him; and if he repents, forgive him. 4 "And if he sins against you seven times a day, and returns to you seven times, saying, 'I repent,' forgive him."
6. **Conclusion: Forgiveness was eternally part of the Plan of God.**

D. The greatest expression of Mercy is love of one's enemies.

1. **Mankind is commanded to love one’s enemies and be merciful, for it imitates God. Luke 6:35-36**
But love your enemies, and do good, and lend, expecting nothing in return; and your reward will be great, and you will be sons of the Most High; for He Himself is kind (**CHR8STOS – good and gracious**) to ungrateful (**ungracious**) and evil (**men; PON8ROS “men” are not in text; ones**). Be merciful, just as your Father is merciful.
2. **We are ordered to be “imitators of God.” Eph 5:1-2**
Therefore be imitators of God, as beloved children; 2 and walk in love, just as Christ also loved you, and gave Himself up for us, an offering and a sacrifice to God as a fragrant aroma.
3. **God expressed His love toward Believers while yet enemies. Rom 5:8-10**
But God demonstrates His own love toward us, in that while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us. 9 Much more then, having now been justified by His blood, we shall be saved from the wrath of God through Him. 10

For if while we were enemies, we were reconciled to God through the death of His Son, much more, having been reconciled, we shall be saved by His life.

4. **The devil is the declared and designated enemy. Matt 13:38-39**
and the field is the world; and as for the good seed, these are the sons of the kingdom; and the tares are the sons of the evil one; 39 and the enemy who sowed them is the devil, and the harvest is the end of the age; and the reapers are angels.
5. **It is reasonable to conclude that if God commanded us to love and show mercy to our enemies, imitating Him, that He also does the same, since He has no "variation or shifting shadow." James 1:17**
Every good thing bestowed and every perfect gift is from above, coming down from the Father of lights, with whom there is no variation, or shifting shadow.
6. **If God showed no mercy toward His enemies, we would not be expected to either. Cf James 2:13**
For judgment will be merciless to one who has shown no mercy; mercy triumphs over judgment.

E. To offer salvation to Adam and Eve and not angels would seem to violate God's Immutability. Heb 13:8

Jesus Christ is the same yesterday, today and forever.

1. **Immutability refers to the Essence and Character of God. He does not change His Essence but manifests it in different forms.**
2. **Immutability exists in the creation of Free Moral Agents as seen in the ability to decide given them. Gen 1:26, 2:17 Cf Isa 14:13-14**
3. **Immutability is seen in educating Free Moral Agents. Gen 2:17, Eze 28:12**
4. **The argument against Angelic Salvation that they sinned with a clearer intellect and fuller knowledge than ours (Point A.1.d.) falls in that all they needed to know was the law and the penalty. Additional knowledge beyond that is not an issue.**
5. **In addition, Immutability is verified in that both levels of intellect in Free Agents were each volitionally tested. Eze 28:16 Cf Rom 5:13**
6. **Immutability is seen in the administration of judgment to both levels of Free Agents. Gen 2:17 Cf Rev 20:14**
7. **There is no reason to not apply God's Immutability to Angelic Salvation, but there is every reason to do so.**

F. If all angels fell, there must have been an offer of salvation which some of them accepted. Rev 16:5 Cf 15:4

G. If all angels did not fall and the sole issue was "How can a loving God cast His creatures into a Lake of Fire," then Christ could have taken on an angelic form to pay the penalty for sin, with no reason to create another being. It is also possible that an unfallen angel could have qualified and

volunteered. Cf Rev 5:3 (Michael and Gabriel show such loyalty that they might have accepted the assignment, if offered.)

- 1. If no salvation had been offered to angels, Christ could have taken angelic form and paid the sin penalty to answer Satan's challenge.**
- 2. Had no salvation offer been made and Christ had paid the penalty for sin, Satan would have then asked "why no salvation," since Your Righteousness and Justice have been satisfied.**
- 3. God's plan called for bringing a new creature, humans, into existence to answer all Satan's charges.**

H. Angelic Salvation was graphically illustrated by the Tabernacle.

1. The Ark of the Covenant. Exo 25:10-22

L.T. (Literal Translation) (10) And they shall manufacture an Ark of Acacia Wood (**humanity**), two and a half cubits long, and one and a half cubits wide, and one and a half cubits high. **(11)** And you shall totally overlay it with pure gold ("**pure**" gold represents the **Righteousness of Deity**), and inside and out you shall totally overlay it, and you shall manufacture a gold molding on it round about (**to hold the lid in place-looks at borders established by Deity**) **(12)** And you shall cast four gold rings for it and give them upon its bottom edges (**four = creative works; gold = Deity; bottom edges = affects time**), and two rings shall be on one side of it and two rings on the other side of it. **(13)** And you shall make identical poles of acacia wood and overlay them with gold (**mean the same thing-another reference to Hypostatic Union**) **(14)** And you shall cause the identical poles to go into the rings on the sides of the Ark, to lift up the Ark with them (**priests are to communicate the Hypostatic Union; God-man**) **(15)** The poles shall be in the rings of the Ark; They shall not be removed from it (**The plan is Unchanging**). **(16)** And you shall put into the Ark the Testimony which I shall give you (**10 Commandments**) And you shall manufacture a covering of pure gold (**the Righteousness of Deity**), two and a half cubits long and one and a half cubits wide. (**The covering looks at the requirements of the Plan of God that Jesus Christ in Hypostatic Union must "fit", to satisfy God's Righteousness and Justice**) **(18)** And you shall manufacture two Cherubim of Gold (**only prior use of "Cherubim to this point is to guard the way to the Tree of Lives; however these two Cherubim perform EXACTLY the same function as Satan did prior to his fall**); You shall manufacture them of hollow hammered work from two of the ends of the covering. (**The covering looks at the place of Propitiation, aka the "Mercy Seat," the Cherubim were not only observers as portrayed by the Cherubim on the Linen curtains that surround the Ark, nor were they simply verifiers of God's Word, acting as guardians like described of Satan in Eze 28:14, but they were partakers of Propitiation as demonstrated by the fact that they were "hollow" indicating their need of the ACT of Propitiation**) **(19)** And manufacture one Cherub from this end and one Cherub from that end;

You shall manufacture the Cherubim from the covering upon its two ends. **(20)** And the Cherubim shall be spreading out two wings for ascent, spreading a protective net **(Cf Eze 28:14 same word)** with their two wings over the covering and their faces each man to his brother **(relationship to each other – Tabernacle is a copy and shadow of heavenly things Heb 8:5; 9:23-24, like man they were caused to stand up as a result of the place of Propitiation) (21)** And you shall give the Covering upon the Ark from the top and in the Ark you shall give the Testimony, which I shall give to you. **(22)** And there I Myself will meet with you at appointed times, and from above the Covering, from between the two Cherubim which are upon the Ark of the Testimony, I will speak to you about all that I will command you for the sons of Israel.

a. Both the Tabernacle and Temple are a “copy” of the heavenly things. Heb 8:4-5; 9:23-24

Now if He were on earth, He would not be a priest at all, since there are those who offer the gifts according to the Law; 5 who serve a copy and shadow of the heavenly things, just as Moses was warned by God when he was about to erect the tabernacle; for, "See," He says, "that you make all things according to the pattern which was shown you on the mountain." **Heb 9:23-25** Therefore it was necessary for the copies of the things in the heavens to be cleansed with these, but the heavenly things themselves with better sacrifices than these. 24 For Christ did not enter a holy place made with hands, a mere copy of the true one, but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us;

b. The Ark in the Most Holy Place portrays the Glorified Hypostatic Union of Jesus the Messiah. It points out that Christ will accomplish the Plan of the Ages.

c. Two Cherubim are made to be an integral part of the Covering which is the “Mercy Seat” or place of Propitiation.

d. It appears that these two Cherubim filled Satan's position after his fall. Eze 28:14

e. The symbolism clearly shows that they had a need (hollow) and partake of the Act of Propitiation and hence partakers of the righteousness of Deity (pure gold). This parallels human beings who accept Jesus Christ as their savior. 2 Peter 1:4-5
For by these He has granted to us His precious and magnificent promises, in order that by them you might become partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world by lust.

f. These two angels underwent some form of transformation (hammered work), being a partaker of Propitiation and permanently affixed to the Deity of God.

2. The Linen Curtains: Exo 26:1-6

L.T. **(1)** Moreover you shall manufacture the Tabernacle with Ten curtains of fine twisted white linen and blue and purple and scarlet material; You shall make them **with Cherubim**, the work of a skillful workman. **(2)** The

length of each curtain shall be twenty-eight cubits and the width of each curtain four cubits; all the curtains shall be the same measurements. **(3)** Five curtain shall be joined, a woman to her sister; and the (the other) five curtains (shall be) joined a woman to her sister. **(4)** And you shall manufacture eyelets of blue on the edge of the one curtain at the end of the set, and likewise you shall manufacture (them) on the edge of the curtain that is outermost in the second set. **(5)** You shall manufacture fifty eyelets in the one curtain and you shall manufacture fifty eyelets on the end of the curtain that is in the second set; The eyelets shall be causing to receive a woman to her sister. **(6)** And you shall manufacture fifty clasps of Gold and join the curtains, a woman to her sister with the clasps, that the Tabernacle may be one.

a. The Cherubim on the white linens denote that they share Christ's Experiential Holiness. Rev 19:8

And it was given to her to clothe herself in fine linen, bright and clean; for the fine linen is the righteous acts of the saints.

b. The blue, purple and scarlet material indicate they share His place of origin, His royalty, and His work. Eph 1:18-21; 3:8-10

I pray that the eyes of your heart may be enlightened, so that you may know what is the hope of His calling, what are the riches of the glory of His inheritance in the saints, 19 and what is the surpassing greatness of His power toward us who believe. These are in accordance with the working of the strength of His might 20 which He brought about in Christ, when He raised Him from the dead, and seated Him at His right hand in the heavenly places, 21 far above all rule and authority and power and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this age, but also in the one to come. **Eph 3:8-10** To me, the very least of all saints, this grace was given, to preach to the Gentiles the unfathomable riches of Christ, 9 and to bring to light what is the administration of the mystery which for ages has been hidden in God, who created all things; 10 in order that the manifold wisdom of God might now be made known through the church to the rulers and the authorities in the heavenly places.

c. Had the Cherubim simply been observers of the Angelic Conflict, they could have been made out of Olive Wood as statues and placed within the Tabernacle, like they were in the Temple. Cf 1 Kings 6:23-28

Also in the inner sanctuary he made two cherubim of olive wood, each ten cubits high. 24 And five cubits was the one wing of the cherub and five cubits the other wing of the cherub; from the end of one wing to the end of the other wing were ten cubits. 25 And the other cherub was ten cubits; both the cherubim were of the same measure and the same form. 26 The height of the one cherub was ten cubits, and so was the other cherub. 27 And he placed the cherubim in the midst of the inner house, and the wings of the

cherubim were spread out, so that the wing of the one was touching the one wall, and the wing of the other cherub was touching the other wall. So their wings were touching each other in the center of the house. 28 He also overlaid the cherubim with gold.

3. The Veil. Exo 26:31-35

L.T. (31) And you shall manufacture a veil of blue and purple and scarlet **(material)**, and fine twisted white linen; it shall be manufactured with Cherubim, the work of a skillful workman. **(32)** And you shall give it on four pillars of acacia overlaid with gold totally, their hooks (also being of) gold, on four sockets of silver. **(33)** And you shall give the veil under the clasps, and shall cause to bring in to there from the house to the veil the Ark of the Testimony; and the veil shall separate for you between the Holy Place and the Most High Place. **(34)** And you shall give the Covering on the Ark of the Testimony in the Most Holy Place. **(35)** And you shall set the table outside the veil, and the lampstand opposite the table on the side of the Tabernacle toward the south; and you shall give the table on the north side.

a. The symbolism of the Veil is clearly identified as the humanity of Jesus Christ. Heb 10:20

by a new and living way which He inaugurated for us thru the veil, that is, His flesh.

b. The fine white linen refers to the Experiential Righteousness of the Holy Ones of which Christ was foremost. Rev 19:8

And it was given to her to clothe herself in fine linen, bright and clean; for the fine linen is the righteous acts of the saints.

c. The positioning of the veil under the white linen curtains tells us that He was made for a little while lower than the angels. Heb 2:9-10

But we do see Him who has been made for a little while lower than the angels, namely, Jesus, because of the suffering of death crowned with glory and honor, that by the grace of God He might taste death for everyone.

I. Our Resurrection Bodies will be equal to angels, due to our adoption as Sons of God. Luke 20:34-36

And Jesus said to them, "The sons of this age marry and are given in marriage, **(mankind in general in time)**, but those who are considered worthy to attain **(through belief in Jesus Christ)** to that age **(Eternal State)** and resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage; for neither can they die any more **(after Resurrection - physical or spiritual)**, for they are like angels **(Nom PI ISAGELOS comes from ISOS which means equal in the ways specified; whether in quantity or quality; Cf Matt 20:12; John 5:18)** and are sons of God, being sons of the resurrection. **Cf Rom 8:23** and not only this, but also we ourselves, having the first fruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves waiting eagerly for our adoption as sons, the redemption of our body.

1. **Man’s status as an adopted “son of God” is due to the imputation of God’s Righteousness, making him a “son of the resurrection.”**
2. **Concerning the composition of our new bodies, we will be equal to angels, but still different as man and woman are equal in Christ but different.**
3. **Concerning our position and authority, we will be greater than angels. Heb 2:7**
 Thou hast made him for a little while lower than the angels; Thou hast crowned him with glory and honor, And hast appointed him over the works of Thy hands; **1 Cor 6:3** Do you not know that we shall judge angels? How much more, matters of this life?
4. **The “equality” extends to marriage and procreation, as well as death. Mankind will never again partake of those things.**
 - a. **A “son of the resurrection” requires that a death must have taken place.**
 - b. **Resurrected mankind is not able to die again in any form, either physically or spiritually. Rev 22:3**
 And there shall no longer be any curse; and the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it, and His bond-servants shall serve Him;
 - c. **Angels were never able to die physically, i.e. a separation of body and soul, but were able to die spiritually through sin.**
 - d. **They can no longer die spiritually, since they too will be in heaven and there is no longer any curse, consequently, they are no longer able to sin.**
5. **This “equality” reasonably extends to the need for Reconciliation, based on universal statements in the Word. Col 1:16**
 For by Him all things were created, both in the heavens and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or rulers or authorities — all things have been created by Him and for Him. **Col 1:20** and through Him to **reconcile** all things to Himself, having made peace through the blood of His cross; through Him, I say, whether things on earth or things in heaven. **John 14:6** Jesus said to him, "I am the way, and the truth, and the life; no one (**OUDEIS = no, no one, nothing**) comes to the Father, but through Me.
 - a. **Reconciliation requires the Imputation of Righteousness called Justification, which is received by faith in Jesus Christ. Rom 4:5**
 But to the one who does not work, but believes in Him who justifies the ungodly, his faith is reckoned as righteousness, **Rom 5:1** Therefore, having been justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ. **Rom 5:10** For if while we were enemies, we were **reconciled** to God through the death of His Son, much more, having been **reconciled**, we shall be saved by His life.
 - b. **The Imputation of Righteousness ultimately renders the creature “Not Able to Sin.” 1 John 3:9**

No one who is born of God practices sin, because His seed abides in him; and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.

- c. **Without this imputation, by God's design, since angels and man are so similar, a creature with its original volition abilities intact would still be able to sin. Thus it appears that it is God's plan to only give fallen creatures the Imputation of Righteousness.**
- d. **If an angel existed who did not fall, the potential to fail and fall would still exist.**
- e. **It is clear from scripture that the destinies of angels have already been determined, based on a prior volitional act. John 16:11**
and concerning judgment, because the ruler of this world has been judged. **Matt 8:28-30** And when He had come to the other side into the country of the Gadarenes, two men who were demon-possessed met Him as they were coming out of the tombs; they were so exceedingly violent that no one could pass by that road. 29 And behold, they cried out, saying, "What do we have to do with You, Son of God? Have You come here to torment us before the time?" **Matt 25:41** "Then He will also say to those on His left, 'Depart from Me, accursed ones, into the eternal fire which has been prepared for the devil and his angels;
- f. **If some angels had never sinned, and God had imputed this Righteousness to them for simply choosing to side with Him, would not Satan have objected, "Why did you not do this before so that none of us would fall?"**
- g. **Satan could have asserted that if God could do this in a manner consistent with His Essence, why didn't he do so when they were created, being perfect and unfallen.**
- g. **Conclusion: our bodies being equal to angels includes the distinct possibility that Righteousness has been imputed.**

J. God is the Righteous Judge and thus any offer of salvation made to the Free Moral Agents He created would be the same. Psa 7:11

God is a righteous judge, And a God who has indignation every day.

1. **The opposite of "righteous" is obviously "unrighteous" and is found in the Hebrew word "AWEL." God is not unrighteous. Job 34:10**
For be it from God to do wickedness, And from the Almighty to commit unrighteousness. ('AWEL)
2. **Unrighteousness is seen in the sin of partiality. Lev 19:15**
You shall do no **injustice** ('AWEL) in judgment; you shall not be partial to the poor not defer to the great, but you are to judge your neighbor fairly.
3. **God is not partial. Deut 10:17**
For the Lord your God is the God of gods and the Lord of lords, the great, the mighty, and the awesome God who does not show partiality, nor take

a bribe. (Same word as Lev 19:15) Acts 10:24; Rom 2:11; Gal 2:6; Eph 6:9

4. **This is especially important to angels. 1 Tim 5:21**

I solemnly charge you in the presence of God and of Christ Jesus and of His Godly angels, to maintain thee principles without bias, doing nothing in a spirit of partiality.

5. **Unrighteousness is seen in the sin of differing weights. Lev 19:35**

You shall do no wrong in judgment, in measurements of weight, or capacity.

6. **Angels and man have similar standards. Rev 21:17**

7. **For God to offer salvation to one creature who fell, like Adam, and not to another creature who fell, i.e. angels, would indicate differing standards, i.e. partiality.**

(One may explain the offer to the seed of Adam and not the angels as being because of man being born spiritually dead, but one cannot handle the situation with Adam.)

K. **The Garments of Angels:**

1. **Only one place in the Old Testament is any clothing for angels mentioned. Eze 9:2,3,11 linen, Cf 10:2,6,7**

a. **This angel is said to be clothed in linen and is consistently referred to as a man.**

b. **Yet, from context one can easily identify the fact that in view is one of six judging angels.** (A judging angel *executes* the judgments of the Lord, but does not make the judgments).

2. **Usually, they are pictured with their wings covering their bodies.**

Ezek 10:6-8

And it came about when He commanded the man clothed in linen, saying, "Take fire from between the whirling wheels, from between the cherubim," he entered and stood beside a wheel. 7 Then the cherub stretched out his hand from between the cherubim to the fire which was between the cherubim, took some and put it into the hands of the one clothed in linen, who took it and went out. 8 And the cherubim appeared to have the form of a man's hand under their wings. **Isa 6:1-7** In the year of King, Uzziah's death, I saw the Lord sitting on a throne, lofty and exalted, with the train of His robe filling the temple. 2 Seraphim stood above Him, each having six wings; with two he covered his face, and with two he covered his feet, and with two he flew. 3 And one called out to another and said, "Holy, Holy, Holy, is the Lord of hosts, The whole earth is full of His glory." 4 And the foundations of the thresholds trembled at the voice of him who called out, while the temple was filling with smoke. 5 Then I said, "Woe is me, for I am ruined!,Because I am a man of unclean lips, And I live among a people of unclean lips;,For my eyes have seen the King, the Lord of hosts." 6 Then one of the seraphim flew to me, with a burning coal in his hand which he had taken from the altar with tongs. 7 And he touched my mouth

with it and said, "Behold, this has touched your lips; and your iniquity is taken away, and your sin is forgiven."

3. **When angels appeared to men, they normally had some type of covering, but it is never mentioned, thus no significance.**
4. **The garments of the Lord are described in the Old Testament.**
Dan 7:9 "I kept looking Until thrones were set up, And the Ancient of Days took His seat; His vesture was like white snow, And the hair of His head like pure wool. His throne was ablaze with flames, Its wheels were a burning fire. **Dan 10:5-7** I lifted my eyes and looked, and behold, there was a certain man dressed in linen, whose waist was girded with a belt of pure gold of Uphaz. 6 His body also was like beryl, his face had the appearance of lightning, his eyes were like flaming torches, his arms and feet like the gleam of polished bronze, and the sound of his words like the sound of a tumult. **Dan 12:6-8** And one said to the man dressed in linen, who was above the waters of the river, "How long will it be until the end of these wonders?" 7 And I heard the man dressed in linen, who was above the waters of the river, as he raised his right hand and his left toward heaven, and swore by Him who lives forever that it would be for a time, times, and half a time; and as soon as they finish shattering the power of the holy people, all these events will be completed. **Rev 1:12-14** And I turned to see the voice that was speaking with me. And having turned I saw seven golden lampstands; 13 and in the middle of the lampstands one like a son of man, clothed in a robe reaching to the feet, and girded across His breast with a golden girdle. 14 And His head and His hair were white like white wool, like snow; and His eyes were like a flame of fire;
5. **It appears that the angel of Ezekiel 9-10 shows that angels will receive similar garments as man for the Eternal State.**
6. **At the Resurrection of Christ, we get a graphic representation of angelic clothing. Matt 28:3** And his appearance was like lightning, and his garment as white as snow.
 - a. **The word here for garment is ENDUMA. (8X)**
 - b. **ENDUMA is a general term for clothing and refers to anything that is put on. Matt 3:4** (John the Baptist's clothes) **Cf Matt 22:11** (Wedding garments)
 - c. **There were two angels dressed in white at the tomb. John 20:12**
 - d. **Another description of the same incident at Christ's tomb, tells us the angelic garment was a robe. Mark 16:5** And entering the tomb, they saw a young man sitting at the right, wearing a white robe;
 - e. **The robe is the word STOL8 and refers to a long garment that reaches to the feet. The word PERIBALLW is translated "wearing" in the NAS. It is the Perfect Passive Participle which should be translated "having been clothed," indicating it was done by an outside source, like when the Lord clothed the man**

and woman with animal skins (Gen 3:21) and the one who believes in Jesus Christ. Rev 3:5-6

'He who overcomes shall thus be clothed in white garments; and I will not erase his name from the book of life, and I will confess his name before My Father, and before His angels.

- f. **The garments of both angels were white. John 20:12**
 - g. **The verbs indicate these garments were something that they received, that had lasting results. (The question is Why?)**
7. **At Christ's Ascension, we also see two angels in white clothing. Acts 1:10** And as they were gazing intently into the sky while He was departing, behold, two men in white clothing stood beside them;
- a. **Here the word for clothing is ESTH8S. (7X)**
 - b. **This same word is used of the two angels at the tomb of Christ. Luke 24:4**
 - c. **This word usually refers to ornate or dazzling apparel. Luke 23:11; Acts 10:30; 12:21; Jas 2:2-3**
8. **The clothing the angels were wearing at the Resurrection of Christ was white, dazzling, snow colored and robe-like.**
9. **Their garments parallel Christ's clothing at the Transfiguration. Matt 17:2-3**
- And He was transfigured before them; and His face shone like the sun, and His garments became as white as light. **Mark 9:3-4** and His garments became radiant and exceedingly white, as no launderer on earth can whiten them. **Luke 9:29-30** And while He was praying, the appearance of His face became different, and His clothing became white and gleaming.
- a. **His clothing is designated by the words HIMATIOV and HIMATISMOS.**
 - b. **The first word denotes an outer garment of any kind, while the second is collective of all the garments He wore.**
10. **Some Typology:**
- a. **"Snow" indicates salvation in that sins have been forgiven by the One who is able to. Psa 51:7** Purify me (David) with hyssop, and I shall be clean; Wash me, and I shall be white as snow. **Isa 1:18** Though your sins are as scarlet, They will be white as now; **Lam 4:7** Her consecrated ones were purer than snow, (denotes purity) **Dan 7:9** and the Ancient of Days took His seat; His vesture was like white snow. **Cf Rev 1:14** And His (son of man) head and His hair were white like white wool, like snow;
 - b. **White garments (HIMATIOV) are given for overcoming by faith for salvation. Rev 3:5** He who overcomes (**Cf 1 John 5:5**) shall clothe himself (**FMI PERIBALLW**) in white garments. **Rev 3:18** and white garments (**HIMATIOV**) that you may clothe yourself (**AMS PERIBALLW**); **Rev 4:4** And around the throne were twenty-four thrones; and upon the thrones I saw twenty-four elders sitting, having been clothed in white garments (**HIMATIOV**)

11. **Angels are pictured wearing the same garments as the Church, which Scripture indicates they did not receive until an appointed time. Rev 19:14** And the armies which are in heaven, having been clothed in fine linen (**BUSSIVOV denotes quality**) white (**LEIKOS**) and clean (**KATHAROS**) Cf **Matt 24:31** where the “armies” include angels of **Rev 19:8** And it was given to her (**Bride**) to clothe herself in fine linen (**BUSSIVOV**), bright (**LAMPROS used in Acts 10:30 for angelic clothing**) and clean (**KATHAROS**) Cf **Rev 15:6** and the seven angels who had the seven plaques come out of the temple, having been clothed in linen (**LIVOV**) clean and bright.
12. **Conclusion: The angels received these garments as a result of their salvation.**
 - a. **Just like our heavenly garments will not be received until an appointed time, neither were theirs received until an appointed time.**
 - b. **The Church will receive their garments at the Rapture.**
2 Cor 5:2 longing to be clothed with our dwelling from heaven; inasmuch as we, having put it on, shall not be found naked.
 - c. **“Nakedness” is initially pictured as nothing to be ashamed about, unless there is a fall, for which then there must be clothing. Gen 2:24 cf 3:10-11**
 - c. **Angels received their garments commensurate with Christ's Resurrection when their salvation was secured. Matt 28:3 & Mark 16:5 & Luke 24:4** (Promised and guaranteed just like to Age of Gentile and Age of Israel Believers, secured by Christ's work on the cross)
 - d. **The reason that they receive theirs first is because they are already in the Eternal State.**

L. The Reconciliation of all things to Christ. Col 1:16-20

1. **The description of Jesus Christ in Colossians 1:12-23 reveals His unique Celebrityship.** (Any position seen from Scripture that would increase what we know about His Celebrityship of Jesus Christ should be worthy of consideration. That He is God and Unfallen Man at the same time makes Him a celebrity; but that He is only Unfallen Creature increases it)
2. **Believers have been transferred from Satan's kingdom to Christ's kingdom. Col 1:13** For He (**Father**) delivered us from the domain (**EXOUSIA = authority**) of (the) darkness (**Satan's Cosmic system**), and transferred us (**Aorist Active Indicative METHIST8MI = at a point of time prior to the present; stand with, remove, transfer**) to the kingdom of His beloved Son,
 - a. **Christ's kingdom includes the Godly Angels. Matt 24:31**
"And He will send forth His (**they are “Godly”**) angels with a great trumpet and they will gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of the sky to the other.

- b. **As well as Believers from all Dispensations. Col 1:12**
giving thanks to the Father, who has qualified us (**Church Age**) to share in the inheritance of the saints (**Holy Ones**) in light
- c. **The "us" is those who share in the inheritance of "the Holy Ones in light." Col 1:12**
 - 1) **"Holy Ones" can include angels. Rev 14:10-11**
he also will drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is mixed in full strength in the cup of His anger; and he will be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels and in the presence of the Lamb.
 - 2) **Angels have a relationship with light. 2 Cor 11:13-15**
For such men are false apostles, deceitful workers, disguising themselves as apostles of Christ. 14 And no wonder, for even Satan disguises himself as an angel of light. 15 Therefore it is not surprising if his servants also disguise themselves as servants of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their deeds.
(Since Satan disguises himself as an "angel of light," there must be "angels of light")
- d. **Again the challenge is to determine if anything excludes angels from these passages.** (i.e. The interpretation may include angels with direct application to the Church, instead of the interpretation referring only to the Church)
- 3. **Those who share the inheritance of the Holy Ones of Christ's kingdom have redemption. Col 1:14** in whom we have redemption (**APOLUTRWSIS + definite article the redemption; this word has several different possibilities as to its meaning, so in the next phrase it is defined**), the forgiveness of (**the**) sins.
 - a. **Redemption was available from Christ's Work on the Cross. Eph 1:7** In Him we have redemption through His blood, the forgiveness of our trespasses, according to the riches of His grace. on the cross.
 - b. **The Church Age Believer's ultimate redemption will take place at the Rapture. Luke 21:27-28**
"And then they will see the Son of Man coming in a cloud with power and great glory. 28 "But when these things begin to take place, straighten up and lift up your heads, because your redemption is drawing near." **Eph 1:14** who is given as a pledge of our inheritance, with a view to the redemption of God's own possession, to the praise of His glory. **Eph 4:30-31** And do not grieve the Holy Spirit of God, by whom you were sealed for the day of redemption.
- 4. **Christ's Rank and Privilege extends to all creation. Col 1:15**
And He (**Son**) is the image (**EIKWN looks at the overt representation**) of the invisible God, (**AORATOS = not seen, invisible; 5X**), the first-born

(PRWTOTOKOS 9X; firstborn; looks at His eternal relationship with the Father) of all creation.

a. Christ is the overt representation of the invisible God. 2 Cor 4:3-4

And even if our gospel is veiled, it is veiled to those who are perishing, 4 in whose case the god of this world has blinded the minds of the unbelieving, that they might not see the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God.

b. Believers in time are conformed to Christ's image through a growing relationship. Col 3:9-11

Do not lie to one another, since you laid aside the old self with its evil practices, 10 and have put on the new self who is being renewed to a true knowledge according to the image of the One who created him. **Rom 8:29-30** For whom He foreknew, He also predestined to become conformed to the image of His Son, that He might be the first-born among many brethren; **2 Pet 1:4-5** For by these He has granted to us His precious and magnificent promises, in order that by them you might become partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world by lust.

c. The Resurrected Christ as King is now invisible to us to demonstrate that He is God. 1 Tim 1:15-17

It is a trustworthy statement, deserving full acceptance, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners, among whom I am foremost of all. 16 And yet for this reason I found mercy, in order that in me as the foremost, Jesus Christ might demonstrate His perfect patience, as an example for those who would believe in Him for eternal life. 17 Now to the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only God, be honor and glory forever and ever. Amen.

d. Believers should gear their life to the time when they see Him who is unseen. Heb 11:27-28

By faith he left Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king; for he endured, as seeing Him who is unseen.

e. The phrase "firstborn of all creation" means that the Father manifested His Essence in the Son before anything was created so that the Son would be visible to that which was created.

f. The Son, Yahweh Elohim, is not the first created thing, but the predecessor to all things as well as the cause of them. Col 1:16; John 1:3 All things came into being by Him, and apart from Him nothing came into being that has come into being. **John 1:10** He was in the world, and the world was made through Him, and the world did not know Him.

g. Christ is the only visible manifestation of the Father. John 1:18 No man (**OUDEIS no one**) has seen God at any time; the only begotten God, who is in the bosom of the Father, He has explained Him. (**The Holy Spirit did appear as a "dove"**)

5. **Christ is the Creator. Col 1:16** For by Him all things were created (**no qualifier-includes angelic beings**), both things in the heavens and on earth (**G8 emphatic Focus on the material of which the earth is made**), visible (**Literally: “the visible things”**), and the invisible (**Literally: “the invisible things”**), whether thrones or dominions or rulers or authorities— all things have been created by Him and for Him.
 - a. **This verse claims that Christ created all things.**
 - b. **There is special emphasis on Volitional Beings. Rev 4:11**
 "Worthy are You, our Lord and our God, to receive glory and honor and power; for You did create all things, and because of Your will they existed, and were created." **Rev 10:6** and swore by Him who lives forever and ever, who created heaven and the things in it, and the earth and the things in it, and the sea and the things in it, that there shall be delay no longer,
 - c. **Hence, no creature is hidden from His sight. Heb 4:13**
 And there is no creature hidden from His sight, but all things are open and laid bare to the eyes of Him with whom we have to do.
6. **Christ pre-existed any creature. Col 1:17** And He is before (**PRO refers to place, time and superiority**) all things, and in Him all things hold together.
7. **His relationship to the church. Col 1:18** He is also head of the body, the church. (**Paul is applying His preeminence to the Church**); and He is the beginning, the first-born from the dead; so that He Himself might come to have first place in everything. (**All things**)
 - a. **This verse considers the Resurrected humanity of Christ.**
 - b. **It focuses on the position of the Glorified Hypostatic Union.**
8. **The God-Man. Col 1:19**
 For it was the Father's good pleasure for all the fullness to dwell in Him.
 - a. **The humanity of Christ was born and hence created by His Deity.**
 - b. **Yet, His humanity did not use the Divine Attributes at the First Advent. Php 2:6** who, although He existed in the form of God, did not regard equality with God a thing to be grasped. **Cf John 8:54** Jesus answered, "If I glorify Myself, My glory is nothing; it is My Father who glorifies Me, of whom you say, 'He is our God';
9. **The God-Man provided Reconciliation. Col 1:20**
 and through Him to reconcile (**Aorist Active Infinitive of purpose. APOKATALLASSW 3X; Cf 1:22; Eph 2:16 = and might reconcile them both {Jews and Gentiles} in one body to God through the cross, by it having put to death the enmity; this verse contains the strong form of KATALLASSW which means to reconcile completely**) all things to Himself (**the all things-just mentioned**), having made peace through the blood of His cross (**blood refers us to His spiritual death**); through Him, I say, whether things on earth or things in heaven.
 - a. **This reconciliation was extended to angels. Eph 3:9-13**

and to bring to light what is the administration of the mystery which for ages has been hidden in God, who created all things; 10 in order that the manifold wisdom of God might now be made known through the church to the rulers and the authorities in the heavenly places. 11 This was in accordance with the eternal purpose which He carried out in Christ Jesus our Lord, 12 in whom we have boldness and confident access through faith in Him.

b. Reconciliation is offered to enemies. Rom 5:8-11

But God demonstrates His own love toward us, in that while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us. 9 Much more then, having now been justified by His blood, we shall be saved from the wrath of God through Him. 10 For if while we were enemies, we were reconciled to God through the death of His Son, much more, having been reconciled, we shall be saved by His life.

c. Reconciliation is primarily a Salvation Doctrine. 2 Cor 5:18-19

Now all these things are from God, who reconciled us to Himself through Christ, and gave us the ministry of reconciliation, 19 namely, that God was in Christ reconciling the world to Himself, not counting their trespasses against them, and He has committed to us the word of reconciliation.

d. It does have application to the Christian Life. 2 Cor 5:20-21

Therefore, we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God were entreating through us; we beg you on behalf of Christ, be reconciled to God. 21 He made Him who knew no sin to be sin on our behalf, that we might become the righteousness of God in Him.

e. The word “Reconciliation” means that an offer of peace has been made to one’s enemies.

f. Mankind either accepts or rejects the offer. It appears that angels also once had the opportunity.

Comment: Many commentators do a song and dance on this verse. Chafer, Systematic Theology, Volume V does the exegesis of these verses to show the Preincarnate Deity of Christ (Page 24-27), and includes angels in verse 16 with documentation but stops at verse 20 and doesn’t exegete it) (C.F.D. Moule admits that Reconciliation extends to the Angelic world but “in a sense known only to the Lord”) (Calvin limits “Things in Heaven” to angels, but he would only be looking at those who never fell-the word means to change from a position of enmity to peace; why “reconcile” that which was not ever at enmity?) (A. T. Robertson identifies angels as being part of verse 16, then in verse 20 he concludes that they are hypothetical statements. Where is the “IF” clause?)

10. Paul then makes application of Universal Reconciliation being offered to all to the Colossians. Col 1:21-23

And although you were formerly alienated and hostile in mind, engaged in evil deeds, 22 yet He has now reconciled you in His fleshly body through death, in order to present you before Him holy and blameless and beyond

reproach — 23 if indeed you continue in the faith firmly established and steadfast, and not moved away from the hope of the gospel that you have heard, which was proclaimed in all creation under heaven, and of which I, Paul, was made a minister.

- a. **Note in verse 23 the phrase “under heaven.”**
- b. **Based on Isa 14:13 where Satan says “I will ascend to the heavens,” this phrase does not exclude the angels.**

11. **Conclusion: Reconciliation was extended to angels.**

M. The "Problem Verse." Heb 2:14-18

1. **The Intention and Result of the Hypostatic Union. Heb 2:14**

Since (EPEI) then (OUV = therefore) the children (Nominative Neuter Plural PAIDIOV = generic word for “children,” note the shift from “sons” of verse 10; our actual adoption as sons takes place at the Rapture {Rom 8:23}; this looks at humanity as a class) share (3S Perfect Active Indicative KOINWNEW= to fellowship, share with each other; Perfect Indicative a lasting fact) flesh and blood (actually; blood and flesh; Eph 6:12 is only other place that this order is used; looks at humanity), He Himself likewise also partook of the same (blood and flesh), that through (the) death (THANATOS) He might render powerless him who had the power of (the) death, that is the devil.

- a. **Man's material being is flesh and blood, so at the First Advent Christ became flesh and blood.**
- b. **Christ's spiritual death and resurrection paid the penalty for sins while His physical death and resurrection took care of the problem of the Sin Nature.**
- c. **The Devil having "the power of death" refers to a power that he has because of the fact of death, namely fear as described in the next verse.**
- d. **He does not have the power to kill someone. Job 2:6**
So the Lord said to Satan, "Behold, he is in your power, only spare his life."
- e. **First century humanity had an incredible fear of death.**

2. **The power of Satan and result to humanity. Heb 2:15**

and might deliver (Aorist Active Subjunctive APALLASSW = 3x; to release in a legal sense cf Luke 12:58; Acts 19:12) those who through fear of death (Physical death is in view; Unbelieving humanity does not even know of spiritual death, so how could they fear it? They are already spiritually dead anyway. All humanity knows of physical death) were subject to slavery all their lives.

- a. **Unbelievers and even Believers with no real relationship with Christ are afraid of physical death. (“Fear not” is the most repeated command of scripture.)**
- b. **Christ's work on the cross provided the means by which one may not fear death. 1 Cor 15:54-58**

But when this perishable will have put on the imperishable, and this mortal will have put on immortality, then will come about the saying that is written, "Death is swallowed up in victory. 55 "O death, where is your victory? O death, where is your sting?" 56 The sting of death is sin, and the power of sin is the law; 57 but thanks be to God, who gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. 58 Therefore, my beloved brethren, be steadfast, immovable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, knowing that your toil is not in vain in the Lord.

- c. **Unbelievers functioning in fear are under the dominion of Satan, although they should not be. Col 1:13**
- d. **The fear of physical death is important to understanding these verses.**

3. The Crux Verse. Heb 2:16

For (**GAR = explanation of assistance concerning the fear of death**) assuredly (**D8POU = 1x; assuredly, without uncertainty**) He does not give help to angels (**Lit: of angels He does not "help"; Present Middle Indicative EPILAMBANO = 19x; literally to "receive upon himself"; these two usages in this verse are the only times the word is in the Present tense; it is always in the Middle voice and all but here in the Aorist**), but He gives help (**same word and construction as previously**) to the descendant (**seed**) of Abraham.

- a. **The King James Version translates Hebrews 2:16 as "For verily he took not *on him the nature* of angels; but he took *on him the seed of Abraham*." (KJV)**
 - 1). **The words "of him the nature of" are not in the Greek.**
 - 2). **The translators sought to interpret their theology rather than translate the passage. This translation in part is probably the major reason there was no research into the subject for centuries.**
- b. **Usages of EPILAMBANO (to receive upon oneself):**
 - 1) **To rescue from the danger of physical death. Matt 14:31; Acts 21:33**
 - 2) **To heal of physical maladies. Mark 8:23; Luke 14:4**
 - 3) **To harm. Luke 20:20,26; 23:26; Acts 16:19; 18:17; 21:30**
 - 4) **To take hold to present to others. Luke 9:47; Acts 9:27 and Acts 17:19**
 - 5) **To get information. Acts 23:19**
 - 6) **To exploit Eternal Life. 1 Tim 6:12,19**
 - 7) **To lead from slavery. Heb 8:9** Not like the Covenant which I made with their fathers on the day of My having taken them by their hand to lead them out of Egypt.
 - 8). **It is never used of salvation.**
- c. **The verb "take hold of" or "help" based on a near and intermediate context of slavery (Heb 2:15 and Heb 8:9) denotes**

- to rescue from the slavery of the fear of physical death. Cf Exo 1:16
- d. Angels were never subject to physical death, hence no fear of it. Isa 14:13-14
 - e. The Present Tense of EPILAMBANO looks at a present ministry of Christ specifically to the "seed of Abraham."
 - f. If salvation alone is in view in this verse, why is the "Seed of Adam" not used in whom all die? Cf Rom 5:12
 - g. The "Seed of Abraham" can refer to either his physical or spiritual "seed."
 - 1) Since the epistle is to the Hebrews, his racial seed must be the first consideration.
 - 2) As well as his spiritual seed. Gal 3:29
 - h. Angels do not have a "seed" since they do not procreate.
 - i. Therefore, the contrast between angels and the seed of Abraham in this verse is there is a ministry available to man concerning the fear of death and not to angels, due to the difference in their nature.
 - j. If the word EPILAMBANO did refer to salvation the present tense would teach that salvation is no longer offered to angels, not that it never was offered. If the writer wanted to say "ever" or "never" an Aorist or Perfect tense would have been used.
4. The reason for taking on flesh and blood. Heb 2:17
 Therefore (OTHEV from which cause or reason; i.e. to release from slavery) He had (He was obligated) to be made like (Aorist Passive Infinity HOMOIOW = like, resembling, used often in the parables for a comparison; humanity without Old Sin Nature but the exact representation of God cf Heb 1:3) His (the) brethren (racial in view as spiritually believers are made like Him, 1 John 3:2; the word used there does not mean equal to, but like; we are *equal* to angels and are *like* Christ) in all things (except Old Sin Nature and personal sins. 1 Pet 2:24), that He might become (via His Resurrection) a merciful and faithful high priest (this would be for the brethren) in things pertaining to (the) God, to make propitiation (Present Passive Infinitive HILASKOMAI = 2x; Luke 18:13 Cf HILASMOS = 2x; 1 John 2:2; 4:10; HILASTERIOV = 2x; Rom 3:25; Heb 9:5) for the sins of the people.
- a. To release humanity from the slavery of the fear of physical death, He took on human form.
 - b. This was part of God's plan to pay for the sins of mankind.
 - c. The humanity of Christ became our Great High Priest. Heb 6:20
 where Jesus has entered as a forerunner for us, having become a high priest forever according to the order of Melchizedek.
 - d. As the Angel of the Lord, He was already the Angelic High Priest. Rev 8:3-5

And another angel came and stood at the altar, holding a golden censer; and much incense was given to him, that he might add it to the prayers of all the saints upon the golden altar which was before the throne. 4 And the smoke of the incense, with the prayers of the saints, went up before God out of the angel's hand. 5 And the angel took the censer; and he filled it with the fire of the altar and threw it to the earth; and there followed peals of thunder and sounds and flashes of lightning and an earthquake. **Luke 12:49-50** "I have come to cast fire upon the earth; and how I wish it were already kindled!

e. **This verse shows He came to take care of man's problem, but does not exclude the angelic problem of sin.**

5. **Application to Believers in time. Heb 2:18**

For since He Himself was tempted (**Aorist Passive Perfect PEIRADZW test to reveal a weakness – none was found in Him**) in that which He has suffered (**Perfect Active Indicative PASCHW = to suffer with lasting results**), He is able to come to the aid (**Aorist Active Infinitive BO8THEW 8X; BO8THOS 1X; Heb 13:6; the “help” starts with salvation {2 Cor 6:2} and looks at help in the form of protection {Rev 12:16}; physical healing {Matt 15:25}; strength for faith in time {Mark 9:24}; and provision of the Word of God {Acts 16:9}**) of those who are tempted.

a. **Because of the First Advent, Christ is able in Glorified Hypostatic Union to help our weaknesses. Heb 4:14-15**

Since then we have a great high priest who has passed through the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast our confession. 15 For we do not have a high priest who cannot sympathize with our weaknesses, but One who has been tempted in all things as we are, yet without sin.

b. **This verse is designed for direct application by the recipients of Hebrews.**

6. **Conclusion: These verses do not prove that salvation was never offered to angels, but that it is not offered now.**

N. **Additional documentation of Angelic Salvation. Rom 8:18-23**

1. **Present sufferings and future glory. Rom 8:18**

For I consider (**determine by analysis**) that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory that is to be revealed to us.

2. **The revealing of the Sons of God. Rom 8:19**

For the anxious longing (**APOKARADOKIA 2X; Php 1:20; a watching with an outstretched head; hence, anxious longing**) of the creation (**KTISIS + the things which Christ created**) waits eagerly (**Present Middle Indicative APEKDECHOMAI = 7X; to readily receive out of grace apart from works**) for the revealing of the sons of God.

- a. **Because of the present sufferings of Believing mankind, our future status in glory will be greater than any creature except Jesus Christ.**
 - b. **Principle: the greatest service receives the greatest reward.**
 - c. **The "Creation" in this verse includes inanimate things, but the major focal point is the angels, who have the ability to perceive what happens. Heb 1:10-13**
 "You, Lord, in the beginning did lay the foundation of the earth, And the heavens are the works of Your hands; 11 They will perish, but You remain; And they all will become old as a garment, 12 And as a mantle You wilt roll them up; As a garment they will also be changed. But You are the same, And Your years will not come to an end." 13 But to which of the angels has He ever said, "Sit at My right hand, Until I make Your enemies a footstool for Your feet"?
 - d. **The "revelation" in view is clearly prophetic, hence the term "sons of God" refers to His "adopted sons," as the revelation of the angelic "sons of God" has already occurred. Job 1:6; 2:1; Rom 9:25-26** As He says also in Hosea, "I will call those who were not My people, 'My people,' And her who was not beloved, 'beloved.'" 26 "And it shall be that in the place where it was said to them, 'you are not My people,' There they shall be called sons of the living God." **Gal 3:26** For you are all sons of God through faith in Christ Jesus.
 - e. **Regenerate mankind which is a new creation (2 Cor 5:17) is also eagerly awaiting the new bodies. Cf Rom 8:23,25; 1 Cor 1:7; Gal 5:5; Php 3:20; Heb 9:28**
 - f. **So the "creation" in this verse emphasizes angels but includes man.**
- 3. Total Subjection of Creation. Rom 8:20**
 For the creation (same word as verse 19) was subjected (**Aorist Passive Indicative HUPOTASSW = placed under the authority of an arranged order**) to futility (d.a. + DFS MATAIOT8S 3X; Eph 4:17; 2 Pet 2:18; refers to a resulting emptiness; MATAIOS (6X) refers to void of result where this is a result of a void; Translate; a resulting void: relates us to Gen 1:2 and the earth became formless and void; denotes also an absence of light darkness domain of Satan {Col 1:12}), not of its own will (OUK + NGS adjective HEKWV = 2x; cf 1 Cor 9:17; not willingly, of free will; voluntarily this word is about as volitional as you can find! It indicates a voluntary desire; rocks and trees do not possess "desires" so the emphasis is again on volitional creatures – "Creation" did not desire what it got, but it was necessary because of the Righteousness and Justice of God), but (ALLA) because of Him (the one) who subjected it, in hope (last two words go with next verse)
- a. **All of creation was subjected to a resulting void. Rom 8:22**
 - b. **This indicates that all Free Moral Agents had a problem for them to partake of this resulting void. ("Hollow Cherubim")**

- c. **Inanimate things which provided the habitat were also placed under this new arrangement which now possesses Entropy. Heb 1:10-12**
 - d. **Again, especially in view are Free Moral Agents.**
 - 4. **Freedom for Creation. Rom 8:21**
that the creation (**same word for creation**) itself also will be set free (**EPI ELEUTHEROW 7X**; this is freedom that results from the payment for the penalty of sin Cf Rom 6:18,22, 8:2; which is accomplished by the Truth, who is Christ. John 8:32,36; Gal 5:1) from its (**the**) slavery (**to sin**) to corruption (**the result of sin-translate: of corruption**) into the freedom of the glory of the children of God.
 - a. **“Corruption” indicates a worsening condition.**
 - b. **That which has been corrupted without regeneration will be removed. Heb 1:10-12; Matt 25:41**
 - c. **The time frame of the freedom is the eternal state. Heb 1:10-12 Cf Rev 21-22**
 - d. **This freedom is a direct result of salvation, through Jesus Christ who initially provides positional freedom, eventually provides experiential freedom, and eternally provides total freedom, which is called “glory.”**
 - 5. **All of Creation awaits this freedom. Rom 8:22**
For we know that the whole creation (**Pres Act Subj without qualifier**) groans (**Pres Act Ind SUSTENADZW 1X**; an inward, unexpressed feeling of sorrow plus with grieves together) and suffers the pains of childbirth together (**Pres Act Ind SUVWDINW 1X**; to have birth pangs with/together) until now.
 - a. **The present creation awaits the totality of the New Creation.**
 - b. **And it all suffers together as long as there is corruption.**
 - 6. **Our part in creation. Rom 8:23**
And not only this (**the freedom for creation**), but also we ourselves (**a specific part of the creation**), having the first fruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting eagerly for (**our**) adoption as sons, the redemption of our body.
 - a. **Paul makes application from the universal principle to the church.**
 - b. **We await the full result of our regeneration, a new creation.**
- O. **Possible references to Total Angelic Fall. Job 4:18**
He puts no trust even in His servants; And against His angels He charges error (**TAHALAH = 1x; folly, sin that is a result of simple foolishness; spoken by Eliphaz who seems to be the smartest of the group but not worthy of a proof text**) Job 15:15 Behold, He puts no trust in His holy ones, And the heavens are not pure in His sight (**Eliphaz again**) Job 25:2 Dominion and we belong to Him who establishes peace in His heights Job 25:5 If even the moon has no brightness And the stars are not pure in His sight (**spoken by Bildad-**

who immediately gets rebuked in the next chapter by Job for statements about man being terminally unclean)

P. Observations concerning the position that no salvation was offered to angels.

- 1. This position is easily derived from the Calvinistic viewpoint of volition and predestination.**
- 2. Specifically, the claim would be that the Godly are always Godly and the fallen always fallen.**
- 3. It seems plausible that Satan would like mankind to believe that no salvation was offered to angels to make it appear God uses differing weights. Cf 1 Tim 5:21 (Especially concerning the Fall of Angels and the Fall of Adam and Eve.)**
- 4. This theological position would also be readily derived from a theological position of Limited Atonement.**

Q. Comparison of the offer of Angelic Salvation with the Essence of God.

- 1. It increases our knowledge of the greatness of His Kingship in that He has the power to forgive and show mercy to even the most despicable being.**
- 2. Since His Righteousness and Justice were satisfied by Christ, there is no reason to not offer salvation.**
- 3. With His Integrity satisfied, Eternal Life in His presence could be legitimately offered to those who knowingly sinned or were deceived.**
- 4. His Love is demonstrated all the more to all of His enemies.**
- 5. His Omniscience obviously foreknew all the angels would fall, so why not provide them with a salvation offer?**
- 6. His Omnipotence has the power to bring about a New Creation that is "Not Able to Sin."**
- 7. His Omnipresence would be a witness to their fall as well as their salvation.**
- 8. It is compatible and reasonable that His Immutability would offer salvation to angels in order to make the same offer to Adam and Eve.**
- 9. His Veracity remains intact concerning His Immutability.**
- 10. Angelic Salvation also increases our knowledge of the magnitude of Grace, Mercy, Propitiation, Redemption, Reconciliation and the Absolutely, Totally Unique Celebrityship of our Lord Jesus Christ!**

R. Summary of Documentation of Angelic Salvation:

- 1. Any position taken must be derived from Stated Truths of Scripture as there is no one simple verse that makes a statement either way.**
- 2. Satan counterfeited salvation to Adam and Eve before it was offered to them by the Lord, indicating a preexisting knowledge of it.**
- 3. There is no doctrine that will explain why fallen angels would not be offered forgiveness by God when Adam and Eve were.**

4. The greatest expression of Mercy is an offer of peace (Reconciliation) to one's enemies, of which Satan is declared to be.
5. Human history is a demonstration of the Immutability of God's Essence, so since He offered salvation to Adam and Eve it is reasonable that He had offered it to angels.
6. Since all the angels fell, salvation must have been offered.
7. Had no salvation offer been made to angels, Christ could have taken on angelic form to pay the penalty for sin to demonstrate how His Love, Righteousness and Justice are not compromised.
8. Angelic Salvation is compatible with the symbolism of the Tabernacle including the Ark of the Covenant, The Veil, and Curtains.
9. Our Resurrection bodies will be equal to angels because of the imputation of righteousness which is given to saved creatures. They will be similar to Christ's.
10. God as Righteous Judge shows no partiality to angels or men.
1 Tim 5:21
11. Garments which angels are seen wearing only after the Resurrection of Christ are given as a result of salvation.
12. There was a need to offer peace to the hostility that was present in ALL creation. Col 1:20
13. Christ's work on the cross was to taste death for all. Heb 2:9-10
14. Heb 2:16 proves that salvation is no longer being offered to angels, not that it never was.
15. The viewpoint that all of the angels did not fall and those who did were not offered salvation seems to come from the Calvinistic Viewpoints of Predestination and Limited Atonement.
16. All creation was subjected to a resulting void caused by sin which indicates that "all have sinned." Rom 3:23 Cf Rom 8:19-23
17. There are other passages which lend direct support to a total angelic fall, but are not sufficient as proof texts.

15. The Cutoff Point for the Offer of Salvation to Angels

- A. Salvation is no longer available to angels. Hebrews 2:16-18**
For (GAR = explanation of assistance concerning the fear of death) assuredly (D8POU = 1x; assuredly, without uncertainty) He does not give help to angels (Lit: of angels He is not giving “help”; Present Middle Indicative EPILAMBANO = 19x; literally to “receive upon himself”; these two usages in this verse are the only times the word is in the Present tense; it is always in the Middle voice and all but here in the Aorist), but He gives help (same word and construction as previously) to the descendant (seed) of Abraham. (17) Therefore (i.e. to release from slavery) He had to be made like (Aorist Passive Infinity HOMOIOW = like, resembling, used often in the parables for a comparison; humanity without Old Sin Nature but the exact representation of God cf Heb 1:3) His (the) brethren (racial in view as spiritually believers are made like Him) in all things (except Old Sin Nature and personal sins. 1 Pet 2:24), that He might become (via His Resurrection) a merciful and faithful high priest (this would be for the brethren) in things pertaining to (the) God, to make propitiation (Present Passive Infinitive HILASKOMAI = propitiation) for the sins of the people. (18) For since He Himself was tempted (Aorist Passive Perfect PEIRADZW test to reveal a weakness) in that which He has suffered, He is able to come to the aid (Aorist Active Infinitive BO8THEW 8X; BO8THOS 1X; Heb 13:6; the “help” starts with salvation {2 Cor 6:2} and looks at help in the form of protection {Rev 12:16}; physical healing {Matt 15:25}; strength for faith in time {Mark 9:24}; and provision of the Word of God {Acts 16:9}) of those who are tempted.
- B. In context, the indication is that the cutoff point would be at least be as far back as the first "seed of Abraham," which would be Isaac. Heb 11:18**
- C. In the Gospels, demon-possessed individuals recognize Christ immediately and beg to not be tormented at that time indicating that their doom is sealed. Matt 8:28-30**
And when He had come to the other side into the country of the Gadarenes, two men who were demon-possessed met Him as they were coming out of the tombs; they were so exceedingly violent that no one could pass by that road. 29 And behold, they cried out, saying, "What do we have to do with You, Son of God? Have You come here to torment us before the time?" **James 2:19** You believe that God is one. You do well; the demons also believe, and shudder.
- D. Mankind only has a limited time to be saved, so it would be consistent for angels to have only a limited time. Luke 16:19-31 (The rich man and Lazarus)**
- E. The most logical point for the cut off of their offer seems to be at the creation of man when God brought into existence a test case of what Satan charged.**

1. **This would arise from the Doctrine of Faith, which focuses on the unseen and not the seen. 2 Cor 5:7**
For we walk by faith and not by sight.
 2. **And hope. Rom 8:24-25**
For in hope we have been saved, but hope that is seen is not hope; for why does one also hope for what he sees? 25 But if we hope for what we do not see, with perseverance we wait eagerly for it.
 3. **Namely, when the reality of the test case became visible any opportunity for faith in the Veracity of God and the hope of salvation was gone. Cf 2 Cor 6:15-16**
Or what harmony has Christ with Belial, or what has a believer in common with an unbeliever?
- F. Nothing indicates that angels can lose their salvation. Ps 103:19-22**
The Lord has established His throne in the heavens; And His sovereignty rules over all. 20 Bless the Lord, you His angels, Mighty in strength, who perform His word, Obeying the voice of His word! 21 Bless the Lord, all you His hosts, You who serve Him, doing His will. 22 Bless the Lord, all you works of His, In all places of His dominion; Bless the Lord, O my soul!
- G. Their offer parallels the offer of salvation to pre-First Advent humanity who had to believe in the Messiah who was to come.**

16. Mechanics of Angelic Salvation:

A. Introductory comments:

- 1. This area of the study poses the most problems.**
- 2. With a failure to see the mechanics, the quick conclusion is that salvation must not have been offered to angels.**
- 3. With that conclusion there is no attempt to answer the exegetical questions that arise from universal statements (as in Col 1:20), or the theological ones.**
- 4. One must first determine if salvation had to be offered to fallen angels because of the stated facts of Divine Essence and the various doctrines.**
- 5. The next step is to make careful analysis of the stated facts of Christ's saving work on the Cross.**
- 6. The main question posed is whether or not Jesus Christ was the God-man-angel?**
- 7. Those who conclude (rightly) that He was not an angel at the First Advent stop at that point and fail to consider "did He have to be?"**

B. Christ's Work on the Cross was to taste death for all. Heb 2:9-10

But we do see Him (**Jesus Christ**) who has been made for a little while lower than the angels, namely, Jesus, because of the suffering of death crowned with glory and honor, that by the grace of God He might taste death for every one (**PAS = "all" and by the context of this verse, includes angels**). For it was fitting for Him, for whom are all things, and through whom are all things (**Cf Col 1:16,20 with similar wording**), in bringing many sons to glory (**as we have previously seen the term "sons" includes angels; Job 1:6; 2:1**), to perfect the author (**ARCH8GOS 4X; the one who takes a lead in; Acts 3:15; 5:31; Heb 12:2 {there translated: author}**) of their salvation (**"their" includes angels**) through sufferings.

- 1. The Saving Work of Christ includes angels.**
- 2. The "all" of this verse does not exclude angels.**
(There is nothing grammatically to indicate that it does; because He was made lower than angels does not mean that He paid only for the sins of lower creation)
- 3. "For whom are all things and through whom are all things" clearly includes angels.**
- 4. Angels are also called "sons." Job 1:6; 2:1; 38:7**

C. The first question to consider involves Christ becoming an angel before the creation of man to undergo an expiatory sacrifice. Did He?

- 1. The answer to that question is "no" because there was only one offering for sin(s) for all eternity.**
Heb 9:28 having been offered once (**HAPAX = stated not implied**) to bear the sins of (**the**) many (**term used for "Israel" cf Matt 20:28 & Mark 10:45**), **Heb 10:12** but He, having offered one sacrifice for sins for all time (**lit: into the DI8NEK8S = 4x; always in this construction; cf Heb 7:3;**

10:1,12; this word means continuous; it is an adjective that says literally, “into the continuum.”), sat down at the right hand of God Heb 10:14 for by one offering He has perfected for all time those who are sanctified

- 2. Conclusion: the cross is the only place ever where the Father's Righteousness and Justice were propitiated.**

D. The Composition of the Hypostatic Union:

- 1. Jesus Christ was and is God. John 1:1-4**

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. 2 He was in the beginning with God. 3 All things came into being by Him, and apart from Him nothing came into being that has come into being. **John 1:14** And the Word became flesh, and dwelt among us, and we beheld His glory, glory as of the only begotten from the Father, full of grace and truth.

- 2. His material nature is composed of literal flesh and blood. Heb 2:14**

Since then the children share in flesh and blood, He Himself likewise also partook of the same, that through death He might render powerless him who had the power of death, that is, the devil;

- 3. Which make up the house for His human soul. Matt 26:38**

My soul is deeply grieved.

- 4. And in which His human spirit resides. John 19:30**

When Jesus therefore had received the sour wine, He said, "It is finished!" And He bowed His head, and gave up His spirit.

- 5. His flesh, blood, soul and spirit make up His body.**

E. Deity also has a soul.

Matt 12:18 My Beloved in whom My soul is well-pleased. **Isa 1:14** I hate (**Heb: My soul hates**) your new moon festivals and your appointed feasts, They have become a burden to Me. I am weary of bearing them.

F. Man obviously has a soul. Gen 2:7

G. Angels have a soul. Job 12:10 In Whose hand is the soul of every living thing, and the breath of all mankind. (**Note the distinction made by this verse – the “soul of every living thing” includes angels**)

- 1. They possess self-consciousness. Isa 14:13-14**

2. They possess emotions. Rev 12:12 the devil has come down to you, having great wrath, knowing that he has only a short time. **Job 38:7** When the morning stars sang together, And all the sons of God shouted for joy?

- 3. They possess vocabulary and categories. Ezek 28:12**

"You had the seal of perfection, Full of wisdom and perfect in beauty.

- 4. They have norms and standards. Jude 6**

angels who left their own domain (**ARCH8 = rule**).

- 5. They possess volition. Isa 14:13-14**

H. Jesus Christ bore sins in His body on the tree. 1 Pet 2:24

and He Himself bore our sins in His body on the cross, that we might die to sin and live to righteousness; for by His wounds you were healed.

I. The soul is what commits personal sin. Lev 4:2

If a soul sins unintentionally; **5:1** If a soul sins; **Num 15:27**; **Eze 18:4** the soul who sins will die; **18:20** the soul who sins will die; **Hos 4:8** and direct their soul toward their iniquity; **Mark 7:21** For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts and fornications, thefts, murders, adulteries, deeds of coveting and wickedness, as well as deceit, sensuality, envy, slander, pride and foolishness. All these evil things proceed from within and defile the man. **Cf Isa 14:13-14**

J. Consequently, the soul is what is saved in salvation.

Psa 34:22 The Lord redeems the soul of His servants; And none of those who take refuge in Him will be condemned. **Heb 10:39** But we are not of those who shrink back to destruction, but of those who have faith to the preserving of the soul. **Jas 1:21** therefore putting aside all filthiness, and abundance of wickedness, in humility receive the word implanted, which is able to save your souls. **1 Pet 1:9** obtaining at the outcome of the faith a salvation of souls.

K. And that is what Christ gave to provide salvation.

Matt 10:28 (Mark 10:45) just as the Son of Man did not come to be served, but to serve and to give His (**PSUCH8**) soul a ransom for many. **John 10:11** I am the good shepherd; the good shepherd lays down His soul for the sheep. **John 10:15** even as the Father knows Me and I know the Father; and I lay down My soul for the sheep; **John 10:17** For this reason the Father loves Me, because I lay down My soul that I may take it again. **1 John 3:16** We know love by this, that He laid down His soul for us; and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren.

L. Based on what Christ Himself said, His soul, resident in His body, is what provided the payment for the penalty of sins. 1 Pet 2:24

M. The fact that Christ is flesh and blood points out that He was true humanity. 1 Cor 15:45-46

So also it is written, "The first man, Adam, became a living soul." The last Adam became a life-giving spirit.

N. The analysis of Christ's "flesh."

1. Being born of a virgin (Matt 1:25), Christ's humanity had no imputation of Adam's Original Sin and thus no Sin Nature. Rom 5:12-15

Therefore, just as through one man sin entered into the world, and death through sin, and so death spread to all men, because all sinned — 13 for until the Law sin was in the world; but sin is not imputed when there is no law. 14 Nevertheless death reigned from Adam until Moses, even over those who had not sinned in the likeness of the offense of Adam, who is a type of Him who was to come. **Rom 5:17-19** For if by the transgression of

the one, death reigned through the one, much more those who receive the abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness will reign in life through the One, Jesus Christ. 18 So then as through one transgression there resulted condemnation to all men, even so through one act of righteousness there resulted justification of life to all men. 19 For as through the one man's disobedience the many were made sinners, even so through the obedience of the One the many will be made righteous. **2 Cor 5:21** He made Him who knew no sin to be sin on our behalf, that we might become the righteousness of God in Him. **1 Pet 2:22** who committed no sin, nor was any deceit found in his mouth.

2. The flesh of Christ emphasizes His heaven-sent, perfect humanity. John 6:51-58

"I am the living bread that came down out of heaven; if anyone eats of this bread, he shall live forever; and the bread also which I shall give for the life of the world is My flesh." 52 The Jews therefore began to argue with one another, saying, "How can this man give us His flesh to eat?" 53 Jesus therefore said to them, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood, you have no life in yourselves. 54 "He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood has eternal life, and I will raise him up on the last day. 55 "For My flesh is true food, and My blood is true drink. 56 "He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood abides in Me, and I in him. 57 "As the living Father sent Me, and I live because of the Father, so he who eats Me, he also shall live because of Me. 58 "This is the bread which came down out of heaven; not as the fathers ate, and died, he who eats this bread shall live forever."

3. His perfect flesh as an "unblemished lamb" refers to His qualifications to bear sins on the cross. 1 Pet 1:18-20

knowing that you were not redeemed with perishable things like silver or gold from your futile way of life inherited from your forefathers, 19 but with precious blood, as of a lamb unblemished and spotless, the blood of Christ.

4. His flesh took care of the problem that man faces of the genetically transmitted Sin Nature. Col 1:22

yet He has now reconciled you in the body of His flesh through death.

5. This required a physical death. Cf Gen 2:17 (Twofold problem of Adam) Cf John 19:30 it has been finished (payment for personal sins).

6. Jesus was qualified to break down the Barrier which was the Sin Nature that was a result of violation of God's Law. Eph 2:15 by abolishing in His flesh the enmity, which is the Law of commandments, contained in ordinances, that in Himself He might make the two (Jew and Gentile) into one new man, thus establishing peace. (The Law in view here goes back to Adam, Jesus Christ paid for sins for all time, not just for the time of the Mosaic Law onward).

7. Mankind has a genetically transmitted Sin Nature which brings about physical death, the separation of body and soul. Angels do not face this problem.

8. **This is why He took on human form, not to pay for personal sins but to take care of the problem of the Sin Nature.**
9. **What about an Angelic Sin Nature?**
 - a. **The Sin Nature is a genetic problem, as evidenced by its transmission from Adam to the rest of the human race, except Christ. Rom 5:12**
 - b. **If angels were not some type of material being, this would not even have been an issue. 1 Cor 15:39-40**
All flesh is not the same flesh, but there is one flesh of men, and another flesh of beasts, and another flesh of birds, and another of fish. There also are heavenly bodies (**SWMA**) (**notice the plural**) and earthly bodies, but the glory of the heavenly is one, and the glory of the earthly is another.
 - c. **With the payment for personal sins taken care of, God can negate the penalty of the Sin Nature (physical death), to those who believe, by a simple transformation.**
Cf 1 Cor 15:51-54 Behold, I tell you a mystery; we shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet; for the trumpet will sound, and the dead will be raised imperishable, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on the incorruptible, and this mortal must put on immortality. (**Example: living Believers at Rapture**)
 - d. **The parallel for the angelic problem is found in the living believers at the Rapture.**
10. **Conclusion: to handle man's problem of a genetically transmitted Sin Nature, Jesus became man. Since angels do not have the same problem, He did not have to become an angel.**
11. **What about a genetically transmitted Angelic Sin Nature? Gen 6:1-4**
Now it came about, when men began to multiply on the face of the land, and daughters were born to them, 2 that the sons of God saw that the daughters of men were beautiful; and they took wives for themselves, whomever they chose. 3 Then the Lord said, "My Spirit shall not strive with man forever, because he also is flesh; nevertheless his days shall be one hundred and twenty years." 4 The Nephilim were on the earth in those days, and also afterward, when the sons of God came in to the daughters of men, and they bore children to them. Those were the mighty men who were of old, men of renown.
 - a. **Since the father transmits the Sin Nature, these angel-men would have angelic sin natures.**
 - b. **God imputed life to these creatures.**
 - c. **Since a new creature was in existence, in a fallen condition, with Volition, the offer of salvation was made. 2 Pet 2:5**
 - d. **Scripture indicates that none accepted it. Gen 6:5** Then the Lord saw that the evil of man was multiplied on the earth, and that every intent of the thoughts of his (man's) heart was only evil continually.

- e. **Since salvation is always conditional based on belief, none would have had to accepted it for there still to have been a valid offer. Rom 3:3**
What then? If some did not believe, their unbelief will not nullify the faithfulness of God, will it?
 - f. **Had one of them accepted the offer of salvation, it appears that Christ would have had be an angel as well.**
12. **Christ's perfect flesh are His qualifications to be pay the price for the Sin Nature, while His perfect soul is what actually bore personal sins, resulting in spiritual death for sins.**

O. The analysis of Christ's Blood.

- 1. **The "Blood" of Christ has tremendous importance to salvation.**
 - a. **It satisfied the Righteousness and Justice of the Father. Rom 3:25** whom God displayed publicly as a propitiation in His blood through faith.
 - b. **We are justified by His blood. Rom 5:9**
having now been justified by His blood, we shall be saved from the wrath of God through Him.
 - c. **Our redemption, the forgiveness of sins is through His blood. Eph 1:7-8**
In Him we have redemption through His blood, the forgiveness of our trespasses, according to the riches of His grace, **1 Pet 1:18-20** knowing that you were not redeemed with perishable things like silver or gold from your futile way of life inherited from your forefathers, **19** but with precious blood, as of a lamb unblemished and spotless, the blood of Christ.
 - d. **We are brought near to God by the blood of Christ. Eph 2:13**
But now in Christ Jesus you who formerly were far off have been brought near by the blood of Christ.
 - e. **We have been reconciled through His blood. Col 1:20**
and through Him to reconcile all things to Himself, having made peace through the blood of His cross; through Him, I say, whether things on earth or things in heaven.
 - f. **His blood cleanses the conscience. Heb 9:14**
how much more will the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered Himself without blemish to God, cleanse your conscience from dead works to serve the living God
 - g. **And cleanses of sin. 1 John 1:7**
but if we walk in the light as He Himself is in the light, we have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus His Son cleanses us from all sin.
 - h. **We have been sanctified by His blood. Heb 13:12**
therefore Jesus also, that He might sanctify the people through His own blood, suffered outside the gate.

i. **And through His blood we can enter the Most Holy Place.**

Heb 10:19

Since therefore, brethren, we have confidence to enter the holy place by the blood of Jesus,

j. **We have been sprinkled with His blood indicating salvation and confession. 1 Pet 1:2**

according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, by the sanctifying work of the Spirit, that you may obey Jesus Christ and be sprinkled with His blood: **Lev 16:15-19** "Then he shall slaughter the goat of the sin offering which is for the people, and bring its blood inside the veil, and do with its blood as he did with the blood of the bull, and sprinkle it on the mercy seat and in front of the mercy seat. 16 And he shall make atonement for the holy place, because of the impurities of the sons of Israel, and because of their transgressions, in regard to all their sins; and thus he shall do for the tent of meeting which abides with them in the midst of their impurities. 17 When he goes in to make atonement in the holy place, no one shall be in the tent of meeting until he comes out, that he may make atonement for himself and for his household and for all the assembly of Israel. 18 Then he shall go out to the altar that is before the Lord and make atonement for it, and shall take some of the blood of the bull and of the blood of the goat, and put it on the horns of the altar on all sides. 19 And with his finger he shall sprinkle some of the blood on it seven times, and cleanse it, and from the impurities of the sons of Israel consecrate it. **Heb 10:22** let us draw near with a sincere heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled clean from an evil conscience and our bodies washed with pure water.

k. **His blood released us from sins. Rev 1:5**

and from Jesus Christ, the faithful witness, the first-born of the dead, and the ruler of the kings of the earth. To Him who loves us, and released us from our sins by His blood,

l. **Satan is overcome because of the blood of the Lamb.**

(And by the way, that context includes angels) **Rev 12:10-12**

And I heard a loud voice in heaven, saying, "Now the salvation, and the power, and the kingdom of our God and the authority of His Christ have come, for the accuser of our brethren has been thrown down, who accuses them before our God day and night. 11 "And they overcame him because of the blood of the Lamb and because of the word of their testimony, and they did not love their life even to death. 12 "For this reason, rejoice, O heavens and you who dwell in them. Woe to the earth and the sea, because the devil has come down to you, having great wrath, knowing that he has only a short time."

2. **The shedding of His literal blood redeemed man from his Sin Nature, portrayed by the animal sacrifices. Heb 9:11-15**

But when Christ appeared as a high priest of the good things to come, He entered through the greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this creation; 12 and not through the blood of goats and calves, but through His own blood, He entered the holy place once for all, having obtained eternal redemption. 13 For if the blood of goats and bulls and the ashes of a heifer sprinkling those who have been defiled, sanctify for the cleansing of the flesh, 14 how much more will the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered Himself without blemish to God, cleanse your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?

3. **Christ's "blood" also refers to His work on the Cross, specifically His Spiritual Death. Matt 26:28 & Mark 14:24; Luke 22:20** for this (cup) is My blood of the covenant, which is to be shed on behalf of many for forgiveness of sins. **Cf John 6:56** He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood abides in Me, and I in him. **Cf 1 Cor 10:16; 11:25**
4. **His literal flesh and blood made a house for His soul, which is called His body.**

P. Christ's soul is where he paid for the personal sins of the Kosmos.

1. **As perfect humanity He was uniquely qualified. (Flesh)**
2. **To accomplish the Work of Propitiation of the Father. (Blood)**
3. **His material being took care of the problem of the Sin Nature.**
4. **While His Immaterial being paid for personal sins.**
5. **The Kosmos includes angels.**

John 1:29 The next day, he saw Jesus coming to him, and said, "Behold, the Lamb of God (perfectly qualified sacrifice) who takes away the sin of the Kosmos. **John 3:16** For God so loved the Kosmos that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life. **John 4:42** we know that this One is indeed the Savior of the Kosmos. **John 8:12** I am the light of the Kosmos; he who follows Me shall not walk in the darkness, but shall have the light of life. **John 9:5** While I am in the Kosmos, I am the light of the Kosmos. **John 12:31** Now judgment is upon this world; now the ruler of this kosmos shall be cast out. **John 14:30** I will not speak much more with you, for the ruler of the kosmos is coming, and he has nothing in me. **John 16:11** the ruler of this kosmos has been judged. **(Last three verses tell us what John means by the work kosmos) John 16:33** These things I have spoken to you, that in Me you may have peace. In the cosmos you have tribulation (Cf Eph 6:12 where our battle is.) but take courage; I have overcome the kosmos. **Cf 1 John 2:2** And He Himself is the propitiation for our sins; and not for ours only, but also for those of the whole kosmos **(whole HOLOS; this word is used John 4:53; 7:23; 9:34;11:50; 13:10; 19:23 and looks at the entirety of what it modifies; John established in his Gospel that kosmos includes angels and in 1 John 5:19 he says "We know that we are of God (because we have been born of God), and the whole kosmos lies in the bed of the Evil One; (John redefines this**

phrase in 1 John in case someone missed it in the Gospel of John)
Cf 1 Cor 4:9 we have become a spectacle to the kosmos, even to angels and to men. **Cf 1 Cor 6:2-3** Or do you not know that the saints will judge the cosmos? And if the cosmos is judged by you, are you not competent to constitute the smallest law courts? Do you not know that we shall judge angels? **(Reason: part of cosmos)**

- Q. Conclusion: personal sins originate from the decisions made by the immaterial part of beings which is the Soul, thus the necessity of the soul to be saved which was accomplished by the soul of Jesus Christ, His immaterial part. Since both angels and man have souls, He paid for the sins of both via His soul in His spiritual death on the Cross.**
- R. This too is easily seen from the fact that the New Birth is not genetic. Gal 4:23-24**
But the son by the bondwoman was born according to the flesh, and the son by the free woman through the promise. **1 Pet 1:23-24** for you have been born again not of seed which is perishable but imperishable, that is, through the living and abiding word of God.
- S. Also, since He was qualified to bear sins for a lesser creature in man, being the lowest common denominator, He was qualified to bear the sins of the greater creature. Heb 2:9-11**
But we do see Him who has been made for a little while lower than the angels, namely, Jesus, because of the suffering of death crowned with glory and honor, that by the grace of God He might taste death for everyone. 10 For it was fitting for Him, for whom are all things, and through whom are all things, in bringing many sons to glory, to perfect the author of their salvation through sufferings.
- T. This brought about the "summing up" of all things in Christ. Eph 1:10**
with a view to an administration suitable to the fullness of the times, that is, the summing up **(Aorist Infinitive ANAKEPHALAIOOMAI 2x; Rom 13:9 to sum up, head up, to present as a whole)** of all things in Christ things in the heavens and things upon the earth
- U. Christ as the Creator makes Him the Head of angels and man. Col 1:16**
For by Him all things were created, both in the heavens and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or rulers or authorities — all things have been created by Him and for Him. **Col 1:20** and through Him to reconcile all things to Himself, having made peace through the blood of His cross; through Him, I say, whether things on earth or things in heaven. **John 1:3** All things came into being by Him, and apart from Him nothing came into being that has come into being. **John 1:10** He was in the world, and the world was made through Him, and the world did not know Him.

V. Christ as the Savior, now in Hypostatic Union, is in the position of highest power, judge of all. Col 3:1-2

If then you have been raised up with Christ, keep seeking the things above, where Christ is, seated at the right hand of God. **Heb 12:22-23** But you have come to Mount Zion and to the city of the Living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to myriads of angels, to the general assembly and church of the first-born who are enrolled in heaven, and to God, the Judge of all (angels and men), and to the spirits of righteous ones having been made perfect.

W. Christ determines who has life. 1 Cor 15:45 "The first man, Adam, became a living soul." The last Adam became a life-giving spirit.

1. The Father is the Planner of making alive individuals. Rom 4:17

(as it is written, "A father of many nations have I made you") in the sight of Him whom he believed, even God, who gives life to the dead and calls into being that which does not exist.

2. While the Son is the Grantor based on Faith. Cf John 5:21-24

"For just as the Father raises the dead and gives them life, even so the Son also gives life to whom He wishes. 22 "For not even the Father judges anyone, but He has given all judgment to the Son, 23 in order that all may honor the Son, even as they honor the Father. He who does not honor the Son does not honor the Father who sent Him. 24 "Truly, truly, I say to you, he who hears My word, and believes Him who sent Me, has eternal life, and does not come into judgment, but has passed out of death into life.

John 3:18 "He who believes in Him is not judged; he who does not believe has been judged already, because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. **John 3:36** He who believes in the Son has eternal life; but he who does not obey the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God abides on him."

3. And the Holy Spirit is the actual agent. John 6:63

"It is the Spirit who gives life; the flesh profits nothing; the words that I have spoken to you are spirit and are life. **Rom 8:11** But if the Spirit of Him who raised Jesus from the dead dwells in you, He who raised Christ Jesus from the dead will also give life to your mortal bodies through His Spirit who indwells you. **2 Cor 3:6** who also made us adequate as servants of a new covenant, not of the letter, but of the Spirit; for the letter kills, but the Spirit gives life. **1 Pet 3:18** For Christ also died for sins once for all, the just for the unjust, in order that He might bring us to God, having been put to death in the flesh, but made alive in the spirit;

4. Additional note: being or having a "spirit" does not preclude one from having a kind of body. Luke 24:39 See My hands and My feet, that it is I Myself; touch Me and see for a spirit does not have flesh and bones as you see that I have. **Cf 1 Cor 15:45**

X. Comparison with Christ's functions in Hypostatic Union.

1. Mediatorship.

- a. **One must evaluate Angelic Salvation in light of the Doctrine of Mediatorship. The issue is whether or not the mediator had to be equal to both parties, or simply in the middle. Job 9:32-33**
- 1) **Angelic Salvation in light of the Doctrine of Mediatorship. Job 9:32-33** For He is not a man as I am that I may answer Him, That we may go to court together. There is no umpire between us, **(Hiph'al Perfect YAKACH = cause to arbitrate)** Who may lay his hand upon us both.
 - 2) **Some people look at the last phrase for their definition of a Mediator, and conclude that Jesus can only mediate because He is both God and man and that a mediator must be equal to both parties. This position fails to consider the main point of the verse which is declaring that in Job's day there was no Mediator, who could negotiate between two parties.**
 - 3) **Moses is declared a Mediator and he was obviously not God. Gal 3:19-20** Therefore, for what reason is the Law? With reference to the transgressions, it **(The Law)** was placed beside grace **(the Abrahamic Covenant)**, until the Seed should come **(First Advent)** to whom **(Abraham)** it **(the Seed)** had been promised, it **(the Law)** having been preciously administered **(until the Promised Seed)** through messengers **(prophets)**, by a hand of a mediator **(Moses)**. Now the Mediator **(Promised Seed)** is not from one party only, but the God is One.
- b. **The Mediator is the "one in the middle." 1 Tim 2:5-6**
 For there is one God, and one mediator **(MESIT8S= 6X; in the middle)** also between God and Men, the man Christ Jesus, who gave Himself as a ransom for all, the testimony borne in His own times.
- 1) **This verse is totally anthropocentric and says that Jesus Christ is the present Mediator between God and man because He is God and man.**
 - 2) **It also points out that it is a direct result of the First Advent. ("who gave Himself a ransom for all").**
- c. **Christ's function as Mediator at the First Advent was to expand the promises of the Abrahamic Covenant via the New Covenant. Heb 6:13-20**
 For when God made the promise to Abraham, since He could swear by no one greater, He swore by Himself, 14 saying, "I will surely bless you, and I will surely multiply you." 15 And thus, having patiently waited, he obtained the promise. 16 For men swear by one greater than themselves, and with them an oath given as confirmation is an end of every dispute. 17 In the same way God, desiring even more to show to the heirs of the promise the unchangeableness of His purpose, interposed **(Aorist Active**

Indicative MESITEUW = 1x; to be in the middle) with an oath, 18 in order that by two unchangeable things, in which it is impossible for God to lie, we may have strong encouragement, we who have fled for refuge in laying hold of the hope set before us. 19 This hope we have as an anchor of the soul, a hope both sure and steadfast and one which enters within the veil, 20 where Jesus has entered as a forerunner for us, having become a high priest forever according to the order of Melchizedek.

1) **The Abrahamic Covenant's clause that "in your seed all the nations of the earth will be blessed," was fulfilled by Christ. Gen 22:16**

2) **It was done to show the Immutability of the Truthfulness of God, which is further demonstrated in the New Covenant.**

d. **This New Covenant is the best promise that has been given to man and is a direct result of His work on the cross.**

1) **The New Covenant expands the promises of the Abrahamic Covenant so it is better. Heb 6:13-20**

2) **It is better than the Mosaic Covenant because it is permanent and unconditional to those who believe. Heb 8:6** But now He has obtained a more excellent ministry, but as much as He is also the mediator of a better covenant which has been enacted on better promises. **(Context is Mosaic Covenant)**

3) **It is better than the Adamic Covenant of the Promised Seed of the Woman, because the Promised Seed has come and fulfilled the Promise and secured the spoils of victory. Heb 12:24**

and to Jesus, the mediator of a new covenant, and to the sprinkled blood, which speaks better than the blood of Abel. **(Abel was the second progeny of Adam, but the first believing progeny, who offered blood sacrifice and ties us to Adamic Covenant.)**

e. **He is the Mediator because personal sins have been paid for. Heb 9:15** And for this reason **(found in verse 14 "offered Himself without blemish to God)**, He is the Mediator of a new covenant, in order that since a death has taken place for the redemption of the transgressions that were committed under the first covenant, those who have been called may receive the promise of the eternal inheritance.

f. **The New Covenant is guaranteed to man because of His death(s) on the Cross. Heb 9:16-18**

For where a covenant is, there must of necessity be the death of the one who made it. 17 For a covenant is valid only when men are dead, for it is never in force while the one who made it lives.

- g. **The reason that there was no Mediator before the First Advent was because sins had been "covered" or "passed over." Rom 3:25** whom God displayed publicly as a propitiation in His blood through faith. This was to demonstrate His righteousness, because in the forbearance of God He passed over the sins previously committed.
 - h. **The Mediator provided the access to God because He is in the middle. John 14:6** (that is what the word means)
 - i. **Christ, in Hypostatic Union, chose to be in the middle. Php 2:6** who although He existed in the form of God, did not regard equality with God a thing to be grasped.
 - j. **No verse says that a Mediator must be equal to both parties, which becomes obvious when one realizes that Moses was a Mediator. Gal 3:19**
 - k. **The mediator is simply a "go-between" for the two parties.**
 - l. **Jesus Christ's present position of "higher than the angels," places Him also between angels and God. Heb 2:9**
 - m. **His primary function at the present time as a Mediator is to be the defense attorney for those who go on sinning after salvation, from the time since He paid for sins. 1 John 2:1**
My little children, I am writing these things to you that you may not sin (**through salvation and spiritual growth, believers are "Able Not to Sin"; before salvation mankind is "Not Able to Not Sin."**). If anyone sins (**and believers do sin, compare 1 John 1:5-10**), we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous;
 - 1) **Since the salvation of angels is a present reality to them and they are not able to sin, they have no need of a Mediator.**
 - 2) **Godly angels were permitted access to God before the cross (as even access was permitted to Satan, even now Cf Rev 12:10) and their salvation was eternally guaranteed by the Cross, (the application of Mediatorship to Angelic Salvation) in a similar manner to the Old Testament Saints.**
 - n. **Conclusion: Jesus Christ did not have to be the God-man-angel to be the Mediator who reconciles the differences between those parties, He simply had to be the one in the middle.**
2. **Christ's High Priesthood:**
- a. **One must also evaluate Angelic Salvation in light of the High Priesthood of Jesus Christ. Some argue that He had to partake of humanity to be a High Priest to man and in a similar manner would have had to partake of the angelic nature to do so for angels. One question might be, if not Jesus then who?**

- b. **The word for High Priest is ARCHIEREUS which is used 123x. It is used 11x to refer specifically to Jesus Christ as High Priest. All of these references are in the book of Hebrews. (Cf Heb 2:17; 3:1; 4:14,15; 5:5,10; 6:20; 7:26,28; 8:1; 9:11.) Six other times it refers to the Levitical High Priest which is contrasted with Christ's Priesthood. (Cf Heb 5:1; 7:27; 8:3; 9:7,25; 13:11.)**
- c. **As a result of His work of Propitiation for the sins of the people, He became a Merciful and Faithful High Priest. Heb 2:17 Therefore (in order to release from the slavery of the fear of physical death), He was obligated to be made like the brethren in all things, that He might become (GINOMAI = something He wasn't) a Merciful and Faithful High Priest in things pertaining to the God.**
- d. **His High Priesthood focuses on His humanity, since multiple verses use only His Name, Jesus. Heb 3:1; 4:14,15; 6:20**
- e. **This Priesthood was given to Him as a result of His perfect humanity. Heb 4:15 For we do not have a high priest who cannot sympathize with our weaknesses, but one who has been tested in all things yet without sin.**
- f. **His perfect humanity was exalted above the heavens. Heb 7:26**
For it was fitting that we should have such a high priest, holy, innocent, undefiled, separated from sinners and exalted above the heavens;
- g. **He now sits at the Right Hand of the Father. Heb 8:1**
Now the main point in what has been said is this: we have such a great High Priest who has taken His seat at the Right Hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens.
- h. **His High Priesthood instituted a new order, after the order of Melchizedek. Heb 5:10; 6:20; 7:11, 15, 17, 21**
 - 1) **It is eternal. Heb 7:21,24 Cf 7:3**
 - 2) **It is because He is King of Righteousness and King of Peace. Heb 7:2 Cf Psa 110:4**
- i. **His High Priesthood intercedes for man. Heb 7:25**
Hence, also, He is able to save forever those who draw near to God through Him, since He always lives to make intercession for them.
- j. **The key is that His Priesthood and Mediatorship are very closely related. Heb 6:17**
In the same way God, desiring even more to show to the heirs of the promise the unchangeableness of His purpose, interposed **(Aorist Active Indicative MESITEUW = 1x; to be in the middle)** with an oath, **cf Heb 6:20** where Jesus has entered as a forerunner for us, having become a high priest forever according to the order of Melchizedek.

- k. **He does not have to make intercession for angels any more as they are not able to sin.**
 - l. **But by becoming man He became the High Priest for man, representing man before God, concerning sins. Heb 7:25**
Hence, also, He is able to save forever those who draw near to God through Him, since He always lives to make intercession for them.
 - m. **For what reason would He have to become an angel to represent angels to God?**
 - 1) **In Glorified Hypostatic Union, He holds the highest rank anywhere. Rev 19:16**
And on His robe and on His thigh He has a name written, "KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS."
 - 2) **He has been exalted above the heavens (Heb 7:26) and hold the "name above every name." Php 2:9-10**
holding the name which is above every name, that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of those who are in heaven, and on earth, and under the earth.
 - 3) **The word High Priest (ARCHIEREUS) is a compound word that means first or ruling priest.**
 - 4) **In the angelic priesthood, who would dare try and usurp the Lord's position? Heb 1:14**
Are they not all ministering (LEITOURGIA = is a word for priestly service) spirits, sent out to render service for the sake of those who will inherit salvation?
 - 5) **That He is the High Priest of all creation goes without question because as High Priest He is seated at the Right Hand of the Father. Heb 8:1**
Now the main point in what has been said is this: we have such a high priest, who has taken His seat at the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens,
 - n. **If Jesus is not the High Priest over all creation, who is?**
 - o. **Conclusion: He became man and became man's High Priest and was exalted above the heavens, especially above angels (Heb 2:9), so His position not His genetics makes Him High Priest over all.**
3. **His Kingship.**
- a. **Some might ask "does His Kingship also need to be totally human to fulfill the Davidic Covenant that He would have a son that would reign forever?" 2 Sam 7:8-16; Psa 89:20-37**
 - b. **This was a promise and a prophecy to David that the line of the Messiah would pass through Him.**
 - c. **Thus it is another demonstration of the Omniscience of God in Human History since it was given almost 1000 years before the birth of Christ.**

- d. **This challenge to the position of salvation offered to angels is similar to the challenge that Jesus would also have to be an angel to pay for angelic sins.**
 - e. **Jesus is “King of Kings and Lord of Lords,” which has no reference nor inference to genetic limitations.**
- 4. The souls of men and the souls of angels.**
- a. **Another possible challenge might ask if Jesus would be required to have an angelic soul to pay for angelic souls?**
 - b. **The composition of the soul of all free moral agents is the same with angels exceeding man only in vocabulary and categories.**
 - c. **Even men and women have slightly different souls, but they have the same composition. Gen 1:27**
 - 1) **Women are more subject to their emotions and hence are more susceptible to deception. Gen 3:1-5 Cf 2 Cor 11:3**
 - 2) **Jesus Christ was not the God-Man-Woman, yet He had no problem paying for women's sins on the cross.**
 - d. **This argument would require the strictest definition possible for Christ's soul, but would have to compromise itself to allow for women.**
 - e. **His soul had the capability to pay for the sins of all souls. 1 John 2:2**
and He Himself is the propitiation for our sins; and not for ours only, but also for those of the whole world.
- 5. Our Resurrection Bodies and the established order of creation.**
- a. **This possible argument states that our new bodies being equal to angels would be a form of evolution and hence not acceptable.**
 - b. **It assumes that believers will be equal to angels in every aspect and hence become angels.**
 - c. **The equality refers only to our new bodies being equal to them concerning no procreation or death. Luke 20:36**
 - d. **It does not account for the fact that Believers become a New Creation (2 Cor 5:17; Gal 6:15) and thus can be made any way God chooses. Rom 9:19-23**
You will say to me then, "Why does He still find fault? For who resists His will?" 20 On the contrary, who are you, O man, who answers back to God? The thing molded will not say to the molder, "Why did you make me like this," will it? 21 Or does not the potter have a right over the clay, to make from the same lump one vessel for honorable use, and another for common use? 22 What if God, although willing to demonstrate His wrath and to make His power known, endured with much patience vessels of wrath prepared for destruction? 23 And He did so in order that He might make known

the riches of His glory upon vessels of mercy, which He prepared beforehand for glory,

- e. **It is a fitting judgment on all the angels who fell from Satan's lie, "I will compare myself with the Most High," to now find themselves in the status of "lower creation." Cf Matt 7:2**
For in the way you judge, you will be judged, by your standard of measure, it shall be measured to you.
 - f. **God will make a New Creation that is equal in some respects and superior in position and authority. Heb 2:7**
You have made him for a little while lower than the angels; You have crowned him with glory and honor, And have appointed him over the works of your hands;
6. **One must beware of a viewpoint that may best be described as an "Eternal Hierarchical Humanism" which appears to come from a misunderstanding of Hebrews 2:7.**
- a. **The position is that "we could not be higher than angels if Christ paid for their sins as well".**
 - b. **This makes man a "celebrity" for all of eternity.**
 - c. **This viewpoint does not want to share Christ's work on the cross, and in some ways is similar to a Believer who would hide the light of the gospel from unbelievers. Cf Matt 5:15**
 - d. **Neither does it share God's desire of the Highest and Best for His creatures. 1 Tim 2:3-4**
This is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Savior, 4 who desires all men to be saved and to come to the knowledge of the truth. (If He desired salvation for man, why not for angels whom He also brought into existence?)
 - e. **Proponents of this view assume that a higher position is THE ONLY EFFECT and then reason that it is because that He ONLY died for the sins of man. This conclusion is a result of Inductive Reasoning that seeks to determine the whole from a part instead of Deductive Reasoning that considers the whole and applies it to the part.**
 - f. **One problem with this argument is that it tries to determine the limits of Christ's Celebrityship from man's eternal position.**
 - g. **It does not begin by looking for the extent and magnitude of Christ's Celebrityship and then seeking to determine how man benefits from it.**
 - h. **Angelic Salvation is Deductive Reasoning that comes from the universal statement of the whole in Colossians 1:20 and 1 John 2:2, and then reasons to the parts.**
 - i. **Accurate reasoning must begin with Universal Statements and then search for any qualifiers because it takes ALL the parts to make the whole. Deductive reasoning demands a verse that says that no salvation was ever offered to angels, and a verse that says for certain enemies of God, He didn't provide**

Reconciliation; and certain Free Moral Agents that Mercy was not displayed; and a verse that would explain God's Immutability not being compromised by offering salvation to Adam and Eve and not to angels.

- j. **Mankind is a "celebrity" only because Jesus Christ is "The Celebrity." Man's "celebrityship" found in his eternal position is an effect of Christ's Celebrityship.**
- k. **It is reasonable that since mankind came to God from a farther "distance," Christ gave the gift of higher position and authority to men. Eph 4:8 and He gave gifts to men.**

Y. Conclusion: Christ did not have to become an angel at the First Advent to reconcile all things to Himself. Since He did not, all arguments that require His humanity only are inconsequential.

- 1. **To some, Christ paying for angelic sins seems to detract from man's exalted position in Jesus Christ. Heb 2:7**
- 2. **However, man is not the celebrity of creation, Christ alone is!**

Z. A Summary of the "ability to sin" concerning Free Moral Agents.

- 1. **Angels, Adam and Eve before their fall were "able not to sin" through the knowledge and application of truth.**
- 2. **Begotten man, born with a Sin Nature and unregenerate, is "not able to not sin," which is called, "Condition Privative." Eph 2:1-3**
And you were dead in your trespasses and sins, 2 in which you formerly walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, of the spirit that is now working in the sons of disobedience. 3 Among them we too all formerly lived in the lusts of our flesh, indulging the desires of the flesh and of the mind, and were by nature children of wrath, even as the res
- 3. **The humanity of Christ was "able not to sin," and didn't. John 8:54**
Jesus answered, "If I glorify Myself, My glory is nothing; it is My Father who glorifies Me, of whom you say, 'He is our God'; **Cf 1 Pet 2:21-24**
For you have been called for this purpose, since Christ also suffered for you, leaving you an example for you to follow in His steps, 22 who committed no sin, nor was any deceit found in His mouth; 23 and while being reviled, He did not revile in return; while suffering, He uttered no threats, but kept entrusting Himself to Him who judges righteously; 24 and He Himself bore our sins in His body on the cross, that we might die to sin and live to righteousness; for by His wounds you were healed.
- 4. **Regenerate man is "able not to sin." 1 John 2:1**
My little children, I am writing these things to you that you may not sin.
- 5. **Godly angels and regenerate man in eternity is "not able to sin" because of the imputation of Righteousness. Rev 22:3**
And there shall no longer be any curse; and the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it, and His bond-servants shall serve Him;

6. **The humanity of Christ after He bore our sins became “not able to sin.” Heb 13:8**
Jesus Christ is the same yesterday and today, yes and forever
7. **“Not able to sin” does not mean that a Free Moral Agent loses volition, but that through the reality of the imputation of God's Righteousness, the regenerate agent is provided the mechanism by which he will never disobey or reject God again. 2 Cor 5:21**
He made Him who knew no sin to be sin on our behalf, that we might become the righteousness of God in Him.

AA. From the information gleaned in this study one can better understand why some angels are called “elect” and “holy.” 1 Tim 5:21-22

I solemnly charge you in the presence of God and of Christ Jesus and of His chosen angels, to maintain these principles without bias, doing nothing in a spirit of partiality. **Rev 14:10-11** he also will drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is mixed in full strength in the cup of His anger; and he will be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels and in the presence of the Lamb. **Cf Col 1:22** yet He has now reconciled you (**Church Age Believers**) in His fleshly body through death, in order to present you before Him holy and blameless and beyond reproach.

BB. The Significance of Angelic Salvation.

1. **It seeks to answer the question concerning the “all things” mentioned in the statement “and through Him to reconcile all things to Himself, having made peace through the blood of His cross; through Him, I say, whether things on earth or things in heaven.” Col 1:20**
2. **There are other universal statements that have no scriptural qualifiers. 1 John 2:1-2**
3. **Information concerning this subject is contained in Scripture, but like all truth it must be sought. Matt 7:7** Ask, and it shall be given to you; seek, and you shall find, knock, and it shall be opened to you. **Cf John 16:13** But when He, the Spirit of Truth comes, He will guide you into all the truth;
4. **Angelic salvation is an issue of God’s Justice, Fairness and Impartiality.**
5. **God grants deeper information for additional growth “in the grace and knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ.” 2 Pet 3:18**
6. **Salvation provided for angels not only teaches the Celebrityship of the Lord Jesus Christ concerning all mankind, but His Celebrityship in all creation.**
7. **Angelic Salvation is not a viewpoint that requires personal individual application.**
8. **It is not a position that a believer must totally understand or totally accept to continue their spiritual advance.**

9. **Angelic Salvation is not a core doctrine to determine orthodoxy, and hence is not a basis for separation within the body of Christ.**
10. **Many great believers throughout history probably gave no thought either way concerning Angelic Salvation.**
11. **So if it is not immediately understood or accepted, relax, pray and continue to study. Jas 1:5**
12. **It should not be foremost in our thoughts to the point of clouding the application of known spiritual truths.**
13. **This study has grown from an analysis of God's Essence as He has revealed Himself in history and then applied these truths seeking additional knowledge.**
14. **Angelic Salvation should be viewed as non-essential to the Christian Way of Life but as an opportunity to further understand and appreciate the extent of the Celebrityship of our Lord Jesus Christ.**

17. Sequence of Events to This Point.

- A. The Triune God has eternally existed.**
- B. He chose to manifest His Essence to share His love and thus Glorify Himself. The means He selected involved matter, creatures, space and time.**
- C. He first created the Universe. Gen 1:1**
- D. Next, He created angels as Free Moral Agents who were “able not to sin” through learning and obeying truth. They clearly had the ability to make choices, even sinful ones.**
- E. An angelic hierarchy was established with Lucifer at the head. Eze 28:18 you profaned your holy places. Cf 28:12 full of wisdom**
- F. God communicated to angels the Truth of His Essence.**
- G. At some point He designated Lucifer His communicator. Eze 28:18 Cf 12**
- H. Lucifer became dissatisfied with his position and wanted to elevate himself to godhood. Isa 14:13-14**
- I. He devised a plan in which he would offer godhood to the other angels. Isa 14:13 I will sit on the Mount of Assembly in the recesses of the North.**
- J. God permitted Satan's lies to be spread to other angels. John 8:44; Eze 28:16 by the abundance of your trade**
- K. The laws God established were violated by all the angels, some knowingly, but probably most of them were deceived. Rom 5:13 no law, no sin imputed Cf Eze 18:16 and you sinned Cf Rev 16:5 the Experientially Holy One Cf 15:4 (Jesus Christ the only one to remain experientially holy).**
- L. God brought Satan to trial and found him guilty. John 16:11; Matt 25:41**
(Notice that if all the angels did not fall, a second witness would be available in the unfallen angels to the “murder” that Satan committed, but if all stood condemned with Satan they could not testify against him. Thus Satan’s claim that “It is Your Word against ours.” Man who is to be brought on the scene, whom Satan will also “murder” spiritually (John 8:44) through Adam (Rom 5:12) will be the second witness against Satan for his own murder. Procreated man who had no say-so in his fall will have the qualifications via salvation to be the second witness. Adam and Eve could not be the second witness because they fell in the same pattern as the angels. Their progeny however did not. Abel was the first second witness to the murder of man for which he was murdered. Cain

exhibited the same jealousy for Abel's rights of primogeniture that Lucifer did for God's position).

- M. Satan was sentenced to the Lake of Fire. Matt 25:41**
- N. Satan brought a lawsuit against God (called an "adversary" in 1 Pet 5:8; meaning "one who brings a lawsuit.") attacking God's love and integrity.**
(if all angels fell it would let him levy the charge of failure to God)
- O. God, as King, could choose to forgive their sins.**
- P. Satan would forgiveness as incompatible with God's Justice and probably go on to attack the entirety of the Essence of God.**
- Q. Since God originally chose to manifest his Essence to His creation, it is reasonable that He would permit questions about His Essence (Matt 7:7), and would answer challenges to His Essence to demonstrate that He is God. Any challenge however is doomed to failure. Rom 3:3-4**
What then? If some did not believe, their unbelief will not nullify the faithfulness of God, will it? 4 May it never be! Rather, let God be found true, though every man be found a liar, as it is written, "That You might be justified in Your words, And might prevail when You are judged."
- R. At this point, it is reasonable that God would offer salvation to the angels.**
- S. The gospel would ask for trust that He could take care of the penalty for sin without compromising His Essence and that He would handle every charge of Satan. Rev 12:10-11** "Now the salvation, and the power, and the kingdom of our God and the authority of His Christ have come, for the accuser of our brethren has been thrown down, who accuses them before our God day and night.
- T. Next, He would present the Plan of bringing into existence a new free moral agent with lesser ability than angels who would actually meet Satan's charges and through this creature pay the penalty for sins.**
- U. Two-thirds of the angels believed that God could accomplish what He said He would do. Rev 12:4**
- V. And hence were imputed with Righteousness and became not able to sin. Cf Gen 15:6** (after the pattern of Abraham – Righteousness imputed at salvation; they were transformed immediately similar to the Living Believers of the Rapture Generation. They received the reality immediately because of their location in Phase Three)
- W. Ground rules for the conflict were then laid to which all parties agreed.**

Section V: Why Man?

18. The Ground Rules for the Angelic Conflict.

A. God will not violate His Essence.

1. His Love is unchanging. Mic 7:18

Who is a God like Thee, who pardons iniquity, And passes over the rebellious act of the remnant of His possession? He does not retain His anger forever, Because He delights in unchanging love.

2. As is His Truth. Heb 6:17-18

In the same way God, desiring even more to show to the heirs of the promise the unchangeableness of His purpose, interposed with an oath, 18 in order that by two unchangeable things, in which it is impossible for God to lie, we may have strong encouragement, we who have fled for refuge in laying hold of the hope set before us.

B. God will not overrule the volition of the Free Moral Agents. John 3:16,36

He who believes in the Son has eternal life; but he who does not obey the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God abides on him."

C. Outside influence on volition will be permitted by both parties. Gen 3:1-7

Now the serpent was more crafty than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said to the woman, "Indeed, has God said, 'You shall not eat from any tree of the garden'?" 2 And the woman said to the serpent, "From the fruit of the trees of the garden we may eat; 3 but from the fruit of the tree which is in the middle of the garden, God has said, 'You shall not eat from it or touch it, lest you die.'" 4 And the serpent said to the woman, "You surely shall not die! 5 "For God knows that in the day you eat from it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil." 6 When the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was a delight to the eyes, and that the tree was desirable to make one wise, she took from its fruit and ate; and she gave also to her husband with her, and he ate. 7 Then the eyes of both of them were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves loin coverings. 1 Kings 22:18-23 Then the king of Israel said to Jehoshaphat, "Did I not tell you that he would not prophesy good concerning me, but evil?" 19 And Micaiah said, "Therefore, hear the word of the Lord. I saw the Lord sitting on His throne, and all the host of heaven standing by Him on His right and on His left. 20 And the Lord said, 'Who will entice Ahab to go up and fall at Ramoth-gilead?' And one said this while another said that. 21 Then a spirit came forward and stood before the Lord and said, 'I will entice him.' 22 "And the Lord said to him, 'How?' And he said, 'I will go out and be a deceiving spirit in the mouth of all his prophets.' Then He said, 'You are **(IPF = may)** to entice him and also **(may)** prevail. Go and do so **(thus = as you have permission to)**.' 23 "Now therefore, behold, the Lord has put **(given)** a deceiving spirit in the mouth of all these your prophets; and the Lord has proclaimed disaster against you."

- D. Only God has authority over life and death. Job 2:6**
So the Lord said to Satan, "Behold, he is in your power, only spare his life."
- E. Direct physical duress may only be inflicted on this lower creation via permission from God. Job 1-2; Luke 22:31-32**
"Simon, Simon, behold, Satan has demanded permission to sift you like wheat; 32 but I have prayed for you, that your faith may not fail; and you, when once you have turned again, strengthen your brothers. "
- F. The animal kingdom, another creation God brought into existence to prove that He could create a living creature without the ability of moral choice, would only be permitted to be indwelt by permission. Mark 5:13**
And He gave them permission. And coming out, the unclean spirits entered the swine; and the herd rushed down the steep bank into the sea, about two thousand of them; and they were drowned in the sea.
- G. The Lord would establish tests to prove that through the knowledge and obedience to truth this lower creation would be able not to sin. Job 1-2**
- H. Satan will be permitted to test God by requesting circumstances in which God will prove him wrong. Job 1-2; Rev 12:10**
And I heard a loud voice in heaven, saying, "Now the salvation, and the power, and the kingdom of our God and the authority of His Christ have come, for the accuser of our brethren has been thrown down, who accuses them before our God day and night.
- I. Angels would not be permitted to genetically contaminate the flesh of this lower creation since it would already be contaminated by the effect of procreation by fallen man. Violation of this "ground rule" would bring divine discipline before the "clock" of the conflict expired.**
- 1. The human Sin Nature was caused by personal sin, hence the Sin Nature is the effect of Adam's personal sin. Rom 5:12**
Therefore, just as through one man sin entered into the world, and death through sin, and so death spread to all men, because all sinned-
 - 2. Since the Effect of sin was genetically transmitted through the father, God's Justice imputes the Cause, namely, Adam's Original Sin. Rom 5:17-19** For if by the transgression of the one, death reigned through the one, much more those who receive the abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness will reign in life through the One, Jesus Christ. 18 So then as through one transgression there resulted condemnation to all men, even so through one act of righteousness there resulted justification of life to all men. 19 For as through the one man's disobedience the many were made sinners, even so through the obedience of the One the many will be made righteous.
 - 3. Because man starts at a greater disadvantage than, they were not to add to it.**

4. **Angels had agreed to this rule. Jude 1:6**
(King James Version) And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day. **(NAS)** And angels who did not keep their own domain, but abandoned their proper abode, He has kept in eternal bonds under darkness for the judgment of the great day. **(C.T.)** And angels not having guarded **(Aor Act Ptc T8REW to guard, keep, with emphasis on "obey")** their own **(reflexive p.n.)** rule **(Acc. ARCH8 means first, translated "principality" in Rom 8:38; 1 Cor 15:24; Eph 1:21; 3:10; 6:12; Col 1:16; 2:10; 15; Titus 3:1; and indicates the first ones or heads of a governmental body, hence the word here clearly looks at an Angelic Law that was agreed to) , but (ALLA-denotes what they did) having left behind (Aorist Participle APOLEIPW = 6X; to leave behind as a coat 2 Tim 4:13) their (possessive p.n.) habitation (OIK8T8RIOV 2X; 2 Cor 5:2 For indeed in this (tent) we groan, longing to be clothed with our habitation from heaven; only other usage looks at our Res. Bodies-angels had the ability to change their material form and to fornicate; their sin was fornication), He has kept in eternal bonds under darkness for the judgment of the great day.**
5. **God punished the angels who participated in this particular sin with incarceration. The rest of the demons receive their punishment at a later date. Cf Jude 1:7**
 Just as Sodom and Gomorrah and the cities around them, since they in the same way as these indulged in gross immorality and went after strange flesh, are exhibited as an example, in undergoing the punishment of eternal fire. **2 Pet 2:4** For if God did not spare angels when they sinned, but cast them into hell and committed them to pits of darkness, reserved for judgment,
6. **The angelic sin was fornication. It was not that they changed their form into that of a man. Godly Angels often appear in the form of a man without consequence. Cf Dan 10:21; Eze 9-10; Gen 18-19**
7. **The ability to fornicate is further confirmation that angels have material bodies of some kind. If they had been able to create from nothing (ex nihilo) the seed to impregnate the women, there would have been no sin. Cf Luke 1:35**
 And the angel answered and said to her, "The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Most High will overshadow you; and for that reason the holy offspring shall be called the Son of God.
8. **The Virgin Birth of Jesus through Mary was not accomplished by a physical act of sex, nor was God's creation out of nothing contaminated.**
9. **God could have simply purified Mary's egg of her Sin Nature before the impregnation. Luke 1:35**
 And the angel answered and said to her, "The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Most High will overshadow **(cf use of word in**

Acts 1:8 where used of the Holy Spirit empowering the new creation) you; and for that reason the holy offspring shall be called the Son of God.

10. God did not violate this “rule of engagement.”

11. From the Flood forward, this law was an enforced prohibition, and the demons were not permitted to fornicate.

19. The Length Of The Appeal.

- A. Peter gives us the key. 2 Pet 3:8**
But do not let this one fact escape your notice, beloved, that with the Lord one day is as a thousand years and a thousand years as one day.
- B. About four "days" had passed from Adam to the time of the writing of 2 Peter. The Garden of Eden was about 3960 B.C.**
- C. Two "days" were to pass from the Dispersion to the regathering of Israel. Hos 6:1-2**
Come, let us return to the Lord. For He has torn us, but He will heal us; He has wounded us, but He will bandage us. 2 "He will revive us after two days; He will raise us up on the third day, That we may live before Him.
- D. The last "day" is the Millennium. Rev 20:1-5**
And I saw an angel coming down from heaven, having the key of the abyss and a great chain in his hand. 2 And he laid hold of the dragon, the serpent of old, who is the devil and Satan, and bound him for a thousand years, 3 and threw him into the abyss, and shut it and sealed it over him, so that he should not deceive the nations any longer, until the thousand years were completed; after these things he must be released for a short time. 4 And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given to them. And I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded because of the testimony of Jesus and because of the word of God, and those who had not worshiped the beast or his image, and had not received the mark upon their forehead and upon their hand; and they came to life and reigned with Christ for a thousand years. 5 The rest of the dead did not come to life until the thousand years were completed. This is the first resurrection.
- E. The Second Advent will not occur exactly on the 6,000th year.**
- 1. After the Millennium, Satan will be released for an undetermined period of time to lead the Gog/Magog rebellion.**
 - 2. The comment in 2 Peter 3:8 says "as" a thousand years which indicates an approximation, not an equation.**
- F. God knows the exact timing, but the appeal will last about 7,000 years.**
(There are further questions of timing concerning whether the time span is figured on the prophetic year of 360 days, or the solar year of 365 ¼, or both, one pre-flood, the other post-flood.)

20. Man's Role in the Resolution of the Angelic Conflict.

- A. **With the Restoration of planet earth, God brought into existence a Free Moral Agent in which all of Satan's charges would be answered.**
1. **Through the animals, He created a living creature with no ability of moral choice.**
2 Pet 2:12 But these (those who indulge the flesh) like unreasoning (ALOGOS) animals, born as creatures of instinct to be captured and killed, reviling where they have no knowledge, will in the corruption of those creatures also be corrupted. **Jude 1:10** But these men revile the things which they do not understand; and the things which they know by instinct, like unreasoning animals, by these things they are destroyed.
 2. **In the progeny of Adam, He brought into existence a Free Moral Agent who was not able to never sin, due to the presence of a genetically transmitted Sin Nature. Rom 7:14-25**
For we know that the Law is spiritual; but I am of flesh, sold into bondage to sin. 15 For that which I am doing, I do not understand; for I am not practicing what I would like to do, but I am doing the very thing I hate. 16 But if I do the very thing I do not wish to do, I agree with the Law, confessing that it is good. 17 So now, no longer am I the one doing it, but sin which indwells me. 18 For I know that nothing good dwells in me, that is, in my flesh; for the wishing is present in me, but the doing of the good is not. 19 For the good that I wish, I do not do; but I practice the very evil that I do not wish. 20 But if I am doing the very thing I do not wish, I am no longer the one doing it, but sin which dwells in me. 21 I find then the principle that evil is present in me, the one who wishes to do good. 22 For I joyfully concur with the law of God in the inner man, 23 but I see a different law in the members of my body, waging war against the law of my mind, and making me a prisoner of the law of sin which is in my members. 24 Wretched man that I am! Who will set me free from the body of this death? 25 Thanks be to God through Jesus Christ our Lord! So then, on the one hand I myself with my mind am serving the law of God, but on the other, with my flesh the law of sin.
 3. **God there countered Satan's accusation that God caused him to fall by simply creating him, knowing he would fall. God is not the primary cause of the fall of any Free Moral Agent. God is not even the cause of the condemnation of any Free Moral Agent who is not able to not sin as that is the effect of Original Sin. Rom 5:12-14**
Therefore, just as through one man sin entered into the world, and death through sin, and so death spread to all men, because all sinned — 13 for until the Law sin was in the world; but sin is not imputed when there is no law. 14 Nevertheless death reigned from Adam until Moses, even over those who had not sinned in the likeness of the offense of Adam, who is a type of Him who was to come.

4. God demonstrates His grace to those Free Moral Agents who do not reach the status of accountability. Job 3:11-19

"Why did I not die at birth, Come forth from the womb and expire? 12 "Why did the knees receive me, And why the breasts, that I should suck? 13 "For now I would have lain down and been quiet; I would have slept then, I would have been at rest, 14 With kings and with counselors of the earth, Who rebuilt ruins for themselves; 15 Or with princes who had gold, Who were filling their houses with silver. 16 "Or like a miscarriage which is discarded, I would not be, As infants that never saw light. 17 "There the wicked cease from raging, And there the weary are at rest. 18 "The prisoners are at ease together; They do not hear the voice of the taskmaster. 19 "The small and the great are there, And the slave is free from his master.

B. God created mankind with a role in the resolution of the dispute. Eph 6:12
For our struggle (**PAL8 1X; a wrestling**) is not against blood and flesh (i.e. **humanity alone**), but against the rulers (**ARCH8 chief rulers of Satan's forces**), against the powers (**EXOUSIA authorities; underlings of the chief rulers**), against the world forces (**KOSMOKRATWR world ruler; those assigned by "Satan to earth**) of this darkness, against the spiritual (**forces**) (**spiritual ones**) of wickedness (**the evil; PON8ROS became evil**) in the heavenlies.

1. This new Free Moral Agent was less wise and powerful than angels. Heb 2:6-7

But one has testified somewhere, saying, "What is man, that You remember him? Or the son of man, that You are concerned about him? 7 "You have made him for a little while lower than the angels; You have crowned him with glory and honor, And have appointed him over the works of Thy hands; 8 You have put all things in subjection under his feet."

2. Yet because of man's initial position and his choice for God through Jesus Christ, he will become higher than angels and will play a part in their judgment. 1 Cor 6:3

Do you not know that we shall judge angels? How much more, matters of this life?

C. He established the same policy of "grace preceding the penalty for judgment" with this new Free Moral Agent as He did with the angels.

1. The penalty for judgment is always administered according to God's timing, as King, which is evidenced to man by the Flood, Sodom and Gomorrah, the destruction of the Northern and Southern Kingdoms, and eternal condemnation.

2. This principle is further demonstrated by the fact that Satan was sentenced to the Lake of Fire, but will not go there until the Great White Throne Judgment. Matt 25:41; Rev 20:11-15

3. **God's Love motivates Him to provide the highest and best for His creatures, but will not compromise His Righteousness and Justice in the process. 1 Tim 2:4**
 who desires all men to be saved and to come to the knowledge of the truth. **John 3:16-18** "For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish, but have eternal life. 17 "For God did not send the Son into the world to judge the world, but that the world should be saved through Him. 18 "He who believes in Him is not judged; he who does not believe has been judged already, because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.
4. **God's manifests His Righteousness and Justice in different ways.**
5. **Through salvation God removes all eternal condemnation. Rom 8:1**
 There is therefore now no condemnation (**KATAKRIMA 3X; Rom 5:16,18; Rom 5:16 = and the gift is not like that which came through the one who sinned; for on the one hand the judgment arose from one transgression resulting in condemnation, but on the other hand the free gift arose from many transgressions resulting in justification. Rom 5:18 = So then as through one transgression there resulted condemnation to all men, even so through one act of righteousness there resulted justification of life to all men. This is clearly the eternal condemnation that came upon all men via the Sin Nature; so it looks at eternal condemnation in hell. The word KATAKRIMA means to "judge according to a standard." Hence it is a reference to God's Justice.) for those who are in Christ Jesus. (some translations add, "who do not walk according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit. {NKJV}; this phrase is not found in the oldest manuscripts)**
- a. **This is because Christ condemned sin in the flesh, by His work on the cross. Rom 8:3**
 For what the Law could not do, weak as it was through the flesh, God did: sending His own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh and as an offering for sin, He condemned (**Aorist Active Indicative KATAKRINW = 18x; to judge based on a standard; not necessarily with eternal condemnation as with KATAKRIMA**) sin in the flesh,
- b. **So this specifically assures eternal salvation for those who believe. Rom 8:35-39**
 Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? Shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? 36 Just as it is written, "For Thy sake we are being put to death all day long; We were considered as sheep to be slaughtered." 37 But in all these things we overwhelmingly conquer through Him who loved us. 38 For I am convinced that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor things present, nor things to come, nor powers, 39 nor height, nor depth, nor any other

created thing, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

6. His Justice is demonstrated toward Believers in the form of Divine Discipline, but without loss of salvation. Heb 12:4-11

You have not yet resisted to the point of shedding blood in your striving against sin; 5 and you have forgotten the exhortation which is addressed to you as sons, "My son, do not regard lightly the discipline of the Lord, Nor faint when you are reprov'd by Him; 6 For those whom the Lord loves He disciplines, And He scourges every son whom He receives." 7 It is for discipline that you endure; God deals with you as with sons; for what son is there whom his father does not discipline? 8 But if you are without discipline, of which all have become partakers, then you are illegitimate children and not sons. 9 Furthermore, we had earthly fathers to discipline us, and we respected them; shall we not much rather be subject to the Father of spirits, and live? 10 For they disciplined us for a short time as seemed best to them, but He disciplines us for our good, that we may share His holiness. 11 All discipline for the moment seems not to be joyful, but sorrowful; yet to those who have been trained by it, afterwards it yields the peaceful fruit of righteousness

a. It can be discipline of the flesh. Gal 6:7-8

Do not be deceived, God is not mocked, for whatever a man sows, this he will also reap. 8 For the one who sows to his own flesh shall from the flesh reap corruption, but the one who sows to the Spirit shall from the Spirit reap eternal life.

b. It can be discipline of the soul. Matt 11:29

Take My yoke upon you, and learn from Me, for I am gentle and humble in heart; and you shall find rest for your souls. **(Comes from the pressures of life)**

c. It can be loss of position and status. Isa 40:23

He it is who reduces rulers to nothing.

7. Certain actions of Believers in time He clearly condemns. Jas 5:9

Do not complain, brethren, against one another, that you yourselves may not be judged **(KATAKRINW)**; **Rom 14:21-23** It is good not to eat meat or to drink wine, or to do anything by which your brother stumbles. 22 The faith which you have, have as your own conviction before God. Happy is he who does not condemn himself in what he approves. 23 But he who doubts is condemned if he eats, because his eating is not from faith; and whatever is not from faith is sin.

8. Therefore, sin and worthless acts, also known as "human good," have eternal repercussions to the Believer, concerning loss of rewards. 1 Cor 3:10-15

According to the grace of God which was given to me, as a wise master builder I laid a foundation, and another is building upon it. But let each man be careful how he builds upon it. 11 For no man can lay a foundation other than the one which is laid, which is Jesus Christ. 12 Now if any man builds upon the foundation with gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay,

straw, 13 each man's work will become evident; for the day will show it, because it is to be revealed with fire; and the fire itself will test the quality of each man's work. 14 If any man's work which he has built upon it remains, he shall receive a reward. 15 If any man's work is burned up, he shall suffer loss; but he himself shall be saved, yet so as through fire. **2 Tim 2:12** if we deny Him, He also will deny us; **2 Cor 5:10** For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ, that each one may be recompensed for his deeds in the body, according to what he has done, whether good or bad.

9. God faithfully applies His Righteousness and Justice to every situation. Heb 2:2

For if the word spoken through angels proved unalterable (**Lit: became firm, 1st class, and it did**), and every transgression and disobedience received a just recompense (**ENDIKOS + MISTHAPODOSIA 3X; Heb 10:35; 11:26; payment of wages**), how shall we escape if we neglect so great a salvation?

a. **With forgiveness for sins, He can legally remove all Divine Discipline to Believers. 1 John 1:9**

b. **He can also let the Believer endure the discipline by removing him from status or position, either in time or eternity.**
(Cf those with crowns and those without).

c. **However, no human Believer will be ranked below angels in eternity. Heb 2:7**

d. **There are several reasons for this:**

1) **Our position in Christ and His position establish us above angels. Heb 2:9**

But we do see Him who has been made for a little while lower than the angels, namely, Jesus, because of the suffering of death crowned with glory and honor, that by the grace of God He might taste death for everyone.

2) **This also lends further credence to the fall of all angels, indicating that the discipline for all carried the eternal cost of loss of position.** (Surrender it to a being that is initially lower in station)

10. Since the Greatest Service receives the Greatest Rewards, it is reasonable man will be higher than angels for mankind comes to God from a greater "distance."

D. God presented this new Free Moral Agent with truth and Laws as He did to the angels, knowing they would sin, but not causing it. Gen 2:16-17; 3:1-7

1. The viewpoint of God is always Truth. John 14:6; Rom 3:3-4

What then? If some did not believe, their unbelief will not nullify the faithfulness of God, will it? 4 May it never be! Rather, let God be found true, though every man be found a liar, as it is written, "That You might be justified in Your words, And might prevail when You art judged."

2. **He originally revealed His Truth through direct communication and the stars. Gen 2:17; Gen 1:14**
3. **Eventually, He inspired a written record. 2 Tim 3:16-17**
All Scripture is inspired by God and profitable for teaching, for reproof, for correction, for training in righteousness; 17 that the man of God may be adequate, equipped for every good work.
4. **The Truth focuses on the Unique Celebrity of the Universe. Gen 3:15; John 14:6.**
5. **God being Omniscient, hence, knowing all there is to know about His Creation, designed a policy of Grace.**
 - a. **Living Grace which is designed to keep His creatures in existence whether compatible or not with God's Viewpoint. 1 Pet 3:7**
You husbands likewise, live with your wives in an understanding way, as with a weaker vessel, since she is a woman; and grant her honor as a fellow heir of the grace of life, so that your prayers may not be hindered.
 - b. **Saving Grace, by faith alone in Christ alone. Eph 2:8-10**
For by grace you have been saved through faith; and that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God; 9 not as a result of works, that no one should boast.
 - c. **Revealing Grace through proclamation of His Truth. Heb 1:1-3**
God, after He spoke long ago to the fathers in the prophets in many portions and in many ways, 2 in these last days has spoken to us in His Son, whom He appointed heir of all things, through whom also He made the world. 3 And He is the radiance of His glory and the exact representation of His nature, and upholds all things by the word of His power. When He had made purification of sins, He sat down at the right hand of the Majesty on high;
 - d. **Greater Grace which focuses on the obedient creature with a Sin Nature in time. Gen 6:8**
But Noah found favor in the eyes of the Lord. Jas 4:6 But He gives a greater grace. Therefore it says, "God is opposed to the proud, but gives grace to the humble."
 - e. **Dying Grace which removes the "Sting of Death." 1 Cor 15:55-57**
"O death, where is your victory? O death, where is your sting?" 56 The sting of death is sin, and the power of sin is the law; 57 but thanks be to God, who gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.
 - f. **Surpassing Grace which is rewards for obedience for eternity. Eph 2:7**
in order that in the ages to come He might show the surpassing riches of His grace in kindness toward us in Christ Jesus.

E. God designed a Straight and Narrow Path to approach Him that was based on His Righteousness. Matt 7:13-14

Enter by the narrow gate; for the gate is wide, and the way is broad that leads to destruction, and many are those who enter by it. For the gate is small, and the way is narrow that leads to life, and few are those who find it.

1. **The journey down the right path begins with faith in the Lord Jesus Christ, which God desires for all mankind. 1 Tim 2:4; 2 Pet 3:9**
2. **To stay on the right path requires the Filling of the Holy Spirit. Eph 5:18**
3. **Consistent exposure to Truth is necessary to know one is on the right path. Eph 5:1; 1 Cor 11:1; 2 Pet 3:18; Heb 12:13** make straight paths for your feet; **2 Tim 2:15; Matt 5:48** Therefore, you are to be perfect, as your heavenly Father is perfect. **2 Pet 3:18**
 - a. **God's design always includes a place to get His Truth.** (Family Priesthood, Assemblies in Israel, Local Church) **Heb 10:25**
 - b. **His design includes designated communicators of His Truth. Amos 3:7** Surely the Lord God does nothing unless He reveals His secret council to His servants the prophets. **Rev 2-3; Jas 3:1** Let not many of you become teachers, my brethren, knowing that as such we shall incur a stricter judgment
 - c. **His written Word is now the Standard of Truth. 1 Cor 2:16; John 1:14,17**
4. **Once exposed to Truth, one must believe it. 2 Thes 2:13**

But we should always give thanks to God for you, brethren beloved by the Lord, because God has chosen you from the beginning for salvation through sanctification by the Spirit and faith in the truth. **1 Tim 4:3** which God has created to be gratefully shared in by those who believe and know **(EPIGNWSKW)** the truth.

 - a. **This produces a "full knowledge," (EPIGNOSIS), which is part of building the Soul. Col 1:3-6**

We give thanks to God, the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, praying always for you, 4 since we heard of your faith in Christ Jesus and the love which you have for all the saints; 5 because of the hope laid up for you in heaven, of which you previously heard in the word of truth, the gospel, 6 which has come to you, just as in all the world also it is constantly bearing fruit and increasing, even as it has been doing in you also since the day you heard of it and understood **(EPIGNWSKW)** the grace of God in truth;
 - b. **Rejection of the Truth falls into four different categories of Negative Volition.**
 - 1) **Negative Volition #1 is rejection of the gospel. John 3:18**

"He who believes in Him is not judged; he who does not believe has been judged already, because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.
 - 2) **Negative Volition #2 is lack of consideration of God's word in application. Gen 3**

- 3) **Negative Volition #3 distortion for personal gain. 2 Pet 2:15**
forsaking the right way they have gone astray, having followed the way of Balaam, the son of Beor, who loved the wages of unrighteousness,
 - 4) **Negative Volition #4 is willfully choosing to disobey. Jas 4:17**
Therefore, to one who knows the right thing to do, and does not do it, to him it is sin.
5. **Your full knowledge (exposure + belief) will be tested. Jas 1:2-4**
Consider it all joy, my brethren, when you encounter various trials, 3 knowing that the testing of your faith produces endurance. 4 And let endurance have its perfect result, that you may be perfect and complete, lacking in nothing.
 6. **Passing the tests produces Divine Good. 1 Pet 2:1-6**
Therefore, putting aside all malice and all guile and hypocrisy and envy and all slander, 2 like newborn babes, long for the pure milk of the word, that by it you may grow in respect to salvation, 3 if you have tasted the kindness of the Lord. 4 And coming to Him as to a living stone, rejected by men, but choice and precious in the sight of God, 5 you also, as living stones, are being built up as a spiritual house for a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God through Jesus Christ. **Rom 12:1-2** I urge you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, to present your bodies a living and holy sacrifice, acceptable to God, which is your spiritual service of worship. 2 And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what the will of God is, that which is good and acceptable and perfect. **Heb 13:15-16** Through Him then, let us continually offer up a sacrifice of praise to God, that is, the fruit of lips that give thanks to His name. 16 And do not neglect doing good and sharing; for with such sacrifices God is pleased.
 7. **Divine Good will be eternally rewarded. 1 Pet 1:3-5**
Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who according to His great mercy has caused us to be born again to a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, 4 to obtain an inheritance which is imperishable and undefiled and will not fade away, reserved in heaven for you, 5 who are protected by the power of God through faith for a salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.
- F. **Satan's objective in the Angelic Conflict is to try and show that God in some way lied about His Essence.**
- G. **So he put into operation his plan, which is called "evil." 1 John 5:19**
the Evil One Cf **2 Cor 2:11** we are not ignorant of his schemes
1. **Evil 1 is defined as the title of Satan's plan, which is designed to disrupt the Essence of God and distort Grace.**

(Satan hates Grace because it is something that he really did not consider when he fell and spread his lied).

2. Evil 2 is defined as a “Thought Process” which is in direct conflict with the Word of God.

a. This Evil is spread by demons and men under its influence. 1 Tim 4:1

But the Spirit explicitly says that in later times some will fall away from the faith, paying attention to deceitful spirits and doctrines of demons,

b. It can be triggered by the Sin Nature. Gal 5:16-17

But I say, walk by the Spirit, and you will not carry out the desire of the flesh. 17 For the flesh sets its desire against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh; for these are in opposition to one another, so that you may not do the things that you please.

c. It is based in the rejection of God’s truth. Heb 3:12

Take care, brethren, lest there should be in any one of you an evil, unbelieving heart, in falling away from the living God.

(NV1 = gospel; NV2 = lack of consideration; NV3 = distortion; NV4 = obedience)

d. It rationalizes itself, seems right, but is foolish. Isa 5:20

Woe to those who call evil good, and good evil; who substitute darkness for light and light for darkness. **Prov 14:12** There is a way which seems right to a man, but its end is the way of death. **Prov 12:15** The way of a fool is right in his own eyes, But a wise man is he who listens to counsel.

e. It is marked by an arrogant, elitist attitude. Jas 2:1-4

My brethren, do not hold your faith in our glorious Lord Jesus Christ with an attitude of personal favoritism. 2 For if a man comes into your assembly with a gold ring and dressed in fine clothes, and there also comes in a poor man in dirty clothes, 3 and you pay special attention to the one who is wearing the fine clothes, and say, "You sit here in a good place," and you say to the poor man, "You stand over there, or sit down by my footstool," 4 have you not made distinctions among yourselves, and become judges with evil motives? **Jas 4:14-16** Yet you do not know what your life will be like tomorrow. You are just a vapor that appears for a little while and then vanishes away. 15 Instead, you ought to say, "If the Lord wills, we shall live and also do this or that." 16 But as it is, you boast in your arrogance; all such boasting is evil.

f. It possesses an earthly wisdom. Jas 3:13-16

Who among you is wise and understanding? Let him show by his good behavior his deeds in the gentleness of wisdom. 14 But if you have bitter jealousy and selfish ambition in your heart, do not be arrogant and so lie against the truth. 15 This wisdom is not that which comes down from above, but is earthly, natural, demonic. 16

For where jealousy and selfish ambition exist, there is disorder and every evil thing.

- g. It leads to more evil. Rom 1:30**
inventors of evil
 - h. It builds happiness on other's unhappiness. Psa 35:12**
They repay me evil for good, to the bereavement of my soul.
 - i. It leads to arrogant speech and action. Prov 8:13**
The fear of the Lord is to hate evil; pride and arrogance and the evil way, and the perverted mouth I hate.
 - j. The Believer is to desire this removed from his soul. Rom 13:12**
The night is almost gone, and the day is at hand. Let us therefore lay aside the deeds of darkness and put on the armor of light. **Eph 4:22-24** that, in reference to your former manner of life, you lay aside the old self, which is being corrupted in accordance with the lusts of deceit, 23 and that you be renewed in the spirit of your mind, 24 and put on the new self, which in the likeness of God has been created in righteousness and holiness of the truth.
- 3. Evil 3 is defined as "Human Good." Human Good is doing a good thing for the selfish reason or doing a good thing for a good reason, but to the exclusion of the glory of God. Matt 7:11**
"If you then, being evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more shall your Father who is in heaven give what is good to those who ask Him!
- a. Human Good seeks to impress men apart from a loving relationship with God. Matt 6:5-6**
"And when you pray, you are not to be as the hypocrites; for they love to stand and pray in the synagogues and on the street corners, in order to be seen by men. Truly I say to you, they have their reward in full. 6 "But you, when you pray, go into your inner room, and when you have shut your door, pray to your Father who is in secret, and your Father who sees in secret will repay you.
 - b. The primary test is Spiritual Love. If it is not involved, good works are simply "Human Good." 1 Cor 13:1-3**
If I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, but do not have love, I have become a noisy gong or a clanging cymbal. 2 And if I have the gift of prophecy, and know all mysteries and all knowledge; and if I have all faith, so as to remove mountains, but do not have love, I am nothing. 3 And if I give all my possessions to feed the poor, and if I deliver my body to be burned, but do not have love, it profits me nothing.
 - c. Human Good counterfeits Divine Good in that it is self-serving and not Christ oriented. Matt 6:1-4**
"Beware of practicing your righteousness before men to be noticed by them; otherwise you have no reward with your Father who is in heaven. 2 "When therefore you give alms, do not sound a trumpet

before you, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may be honored by men. Truly I say to you, they have their reward in full. 3 "But when you give alms, do not let your left hand know what your right hand is doing 4 that your alms may be in secret; and your Father who sees in secret will repay you.

- d. **Human Good twists Divinely Prescribed Principles of function for selfish gain, thus making one a “worker of iniquity” who is promised ruin. Prov 10:28**

The hope of the righteous is gladness, But the expectation of the wicked perishes.

- e. **Satan uses this system to pervert the gospel as well. Gen 3:7**
Then the eyes of both of them were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves loin coverings.

- f. **Human Good leads to Secular Humanism as seen in the New Age Movement. 2 Peter 2:1-3**

But false prophets also arose among the people, just as there will also be false teachers among you, who will secretly introduce destructive heresies, even denying the Master who bought them, bringing swift destruction upon themselves. 2 And many will follow their sensuality, and because of them the way of the truth will be maligned; 3 and in their greed they will exploit you with false words; their judgment from long ago is not idle, and their destruction is not asleep. 2 **Cor 11:13-15** For such men are false apostles, deceitful workers, disguising themselves as apostles of Christ. 14 And no wonder, for even Satan disguises himself as an angel of light. 15 Therefore it is not surprising if his servants also disguise themselves as servants of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their deeds.

- g. **A Human Good system of salvation and obtaining spirituality by works is seen in all the cults and major world religions.**

- 4. **Evil 4 is defined as “Personal Sin,” which is violation of a law of God. Col 3:9**

Do not lie to one another, since you laid aside the old self with its evil practices,

- a. **By definition, to sin means to miss the mark, and where there is no law there is no sin. Rom 4:15**

for the Law brings about wrath, but where there is no law, neither is there violation. **Rom 5:13** for until the Law sin was in the world; but sin is not imputed when there is no law.

- b. **The Believer is to obey God’s “Charge.” Gen 26:5**

because Abraham obeyed Me and kept My charge, My commandments, My statutes and My laws."

- 1). **This first means to view God’s laws as valuable.**

- 2). **This includes commandments which emphasize the Mental Attitude orientation to authority.**

- 3). **And statutes which focus on the overt applications.**
- 4). **And laws which focus on the specifics.**
- c. **These words define areas where we might “miss the mark.”**
 - 1). **In our attitude. Matt 5:27-29**
 "You have heard that it was said, 'You shall not commit adultery'; 28 but I say to you, that everyone who looks on a woman to lust for her has committed adultery with her already in his heart.
 - 2). **In our speech. Jas 3:2**
 For we all stumble in many ways. If anyone does not stumble in what he says, he is a perfect man, able to bridle the whole body as well.
 - 3). **In our actions. Rom 7:5**
 For while we were in the flesh, the sinful passions, which were aroused by the Law, were at work in the members of our body to bear fruit for death.
- d. **Satan’s plan is to tempt to sin. Jas 1:13**
 Let no one say when he is tempted, “I am being tempted by God;” for God cannot be tempted by evil, and He Himself does not tempt any one. **Matt 4:1** Then Jesus was led up by the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted by the devil.
- e. **All sin is abhorrent to God, due to His absolute Righteousness. Gen 3:6**
- f. **Those who continually practice sin without confession of sin and change are ensnared in Satan’s plan. 1 John 3:8** the one who practices sin (**Pres Ptc. keeps on**) is of the devil; for the devil has sinned from the beginning. The Son of God appeared for this purpose, that He might destroy the works of the devil.
- 5. **Evil 5 is defined as the Overt Organizations of Evil.**
 - a. **They conspire to attack God’s Truth. Ps 83:1-8**
 God, do not remain quiet; Do not be silent and, O God, do not be still. 2 For, behold, Thine enemies make an uproar; And those who hate Thee have exalted themselves. 3 They make shrewd plans against Thy people, And conspire together against Thy treasured ones. 4 They have said, "Come, and let us wipe them out as a nation, That the name of Israel be remembered no more." 5 For they have conspired together with one mind; Against Thee do they make a covenant: 6 The tents of Edom and the Ishmaelites; Moab, and the Hagrites; 7 Gebal, and Ammon, and Amalek; Philistia with the inhabitants of Tyre; 8 Assyria also has joined with them; They have become a help to the children of Lot.
 - b. **They can be governments (individual or collaborative), societies (both secret and open), or religious movements (with some even calling themselves “Christian”).**

- c. **They include those who may begin in the Truth and then become ensnared by Satan's schemes become evil and thus enemies of God. James 4:1-4**
 What is the source of quarrels and conflicts among you? Is not the source your pleasures that wage war in your members? 2 You lust and do not have; so you commit murder. And you are envious and cannot obtain; so you fight and quarrel. You do not have because you do not ask. 3 You ask and do not receive, because you ask with wrong motives, so that you may spend it on your pleasures. 4 You adulteresses, do you not know that friendship with the world is hostility toward God? Therefore whoever wishes to be a friend of the world makes himself an enemy of God.
- d. **This would include those who want to build their own kingdom and not spread the word about the divine one. Gen 10:8-13**
 Now Cush became the father of Nimrod; he became a mighty one on the earth. 9 He was a mighty hunter before the Lord; therefore it is said, "Like Nimrod a mighty hunter before the Lord." 10 And the beginning of his kingdom was Babel and Erech and Accad and Calneh, in the land of Shinar. 11 From that land he went forth into Assyria, and built Nineveh and Rehoboth-Ir and Calah, 12 and Resen between Nineveh and Calah; that is the great city.
- e. **This would include organizations that are designed to take the place of the Local Assembly.**

H. Evil recognizes the existence and tendencies of the human Sin Nature and uses it to its own ends. Rom 7:18

For I know that nothing good dwells in me, that is, in my flesh; for the wishing is present in me, but the doing of the good is not. **Mark 7:20-23** And He was saying, "That which proceeds out of the man, that is what defiles the man. 21 "For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed the evil thoughts, fornications, thefts, murders, adulteries, 22 deeds of coveting and wickedness, as well as deceit, sensuality, envy, slander, pride and foolishness. 23 "All these **evil** things proceed from within and defile the man."

1. **The Sin Nature came about as a result of Adam's eating from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. Gen 3:6 Cf Rom 5:12**
2. **All the trees of the Garden of Eden were designed for good with this one exception. Gen 2:16-17**
3. **So this "Knowledge of Good" was of such a nature that it was off-limits, i.e. Human Good.**
4. **Satan's plan of Evil, distorts grace (Evil 1), affects the thought process (Evil 2), manifests itself in human good and personal sin (Evil 3 & 4), and is attracted to overt organizations (Evil 5).**
5. **The Sin Nature supplies a trend away from God which continues throughout life, and that must be battled. Rom 6:12**
 Therefore do not let sin reign in your mortal body that you should obey its lusts,

6. **Therefore, begotten man comes into the world in a state of hostility with God. Rom 5:8-10**
 But God demonstrates His own love toward us, in that while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us. 9 Much more then, having now been justified by His blood, we shall be saved from the wrath of God through Him. 10 For if while we were enemies, we were reconciled to God through the death of His Son, much more, having been reconciled, we shall be saved by His life.
7. **Apart from salvation, man can never have fellowship with God in time or eternity. John 3:18**
 "He who believes in Him is not judged; he who does not believe has been judged already, because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.
8. **Apart from obedience to the Truth, man can never have a relationship with God in time, even if he is saved. Rom 2:8-10**
 but to those who are selfishly ambitious and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, wrath and indignation. 9 There will be tribulation and distress for every soul of man who does evil, of the Jew first and also of the Greek,
9. **Evil lays snares via idolatry, which is anything considered more valuable and relevant than God, to keep one entrapped. Psa 106:36**
 And served their idols, which became a snare to them.
10. **Satan will use any and all means to keep the Unbeliever imprisoned and the Believer neutralized. Rom 6:6**
 knowing this, that our old self was crucified with Him, that our body of sin might be done away with, that we should no longer be slaves to sin;
11. **Entering one area of Evil, opens the door to others. 1 Cor 10:5-12**
 (one can slide or jump into the system)
 Nevertheless, with most of them God was not well-pleased; for they were laid low in the wilderness. 6 Now these things happened as examples for us, that we should not crave evil things, as they also craved. 7 And do not be idolaters, as some of them were; as it is written, "The people sat down to eat and drink, and stood up to play." 8 Nor let us act immorally, as some of them did, and twenty-three thousand fell in one day. 9 Nor let us try the Lord, as some of them did, and were destroyed by the serpents. 10 Nor grumble, as some of them did, and were destroyed by the destroyer. 11 Now these things happened to them as an example, and they were written for our instruction, upon whom the ends of the ages have come.

I. Ways that Believers become a casualty to evil:

1. **Failure to recognize the total and complete inspiration of the Scriptures. 2 Tim 3:16-17**
2. **Failure to consistently assemble with other believers, or study the Word of God. Heb 10:25; 2 Tim 2:15**
3. **Lack of concentration during times of intake or application. 1 Thes 5:6** so then let us not sleep as others do, but let us be alert and sober.

4. Failure to literally interpret the Scriptures. 2 Pet 3:1-7

This is now, beloved, the second letter I am writing to you in which I am stirring up your sincere mind by way of reminder, 2 that you should remember the words spoken beforehand by the holy prophets and the commandment of the Lord and Savior spoken by your apostles. 3 Know this first of all, that in the last days mockers will come with their mocking, following after their own lusts, 4 and saying, "Where is the promise of His coming? For ever since the fathers fell asleep, all continues just as it was from the beginning of creation." 5 For when they maintain this, it escapes their notice that by the word of God the heavens existed long ago and the earth was formed out of water and by water, 6 through which the world at that time was destroyed, being flooded with water. 7 But the present heavens and earth by His word are being reserved for fire, kept for the day of judgment and destruction of ungodly men.

5. Failure to do what is right in the Lord's eyes, because of doing what one personally views as "right." Deut 21:9

So you shall remove the guilt of innocent blood from your midst, when you do what is right in the eyes of the Lord. **Judg 17:6** In those days there was no king in Israel; every man did what was right in his own eyes. **Prov 12:15** The way of a fool is right in his own eyes, But a wise man is he who listens to counsel. **Prov 21:2** Every man's way is right in his own eyes, But the Lord weighs the hearts.

6. Rejection of the Literal Truth. 1 Cor 15:12-13

Now if Christ is preached, that He has been raised from the dead, how do some among you say that there is no resurrection of the dead?

7. Refusal to apply. Gen 3:6

J. God designed for man a means by which fallen and hostile man can come to God and have victory over the Cosmic System.

1. It is based on Faith. 1 John 5:4

And who is the one who overcomes the world; but he who believes that Jesus is the Son of God.

2. The faith must be in the right object thereby removing positionally and eternally the penalty for the effects of the Evil of sin. John 3:16,36; Col 1:21-22

And although you were formerly alienated and hostile in mind, engaged in evil deeds, 22 yet He has now reconciled you in His fleshly body through death, in order to present you before Him holy and blameless and beyond reproach —

3. God provided a supernatural ability to understand spiritual things. 1 Cor 2:10-16

For to us God revealed them through the Spirit; for the Spirit searches all things, even the depths of God. 11 For who among men knows the thoughts of a man except the spirit of the man, which is in him? Even so the thoughts of God no one knows except the Spirit of God. 12 Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit who is from God,

that we might know the things freely given to us by God, 13 which things we also speak, not in words taught by human wisdom, but in those taught by the Spirit, combining spiritual thoughts with spiritual words. 14 But a natural man does not accept the things of the Spirit of God; for they are foolishness to him, and he cannot understand them, because they are spiritually appraised. 15 But he who is spiritual appraises all things, yet he himself is appraised by no man. 16 For who has known the mind of the Lord, that he should instruct Him? But we have the mind of Christ.

4. Obedience to Truth by the power of the Holy Spirit temporarily overcomes the power of sin. Col 3:12-17

And so, as those who have been chosen of God, holy and beloved, put on a heart of compassion, kindness, humility, gentleness and patience; 13 bearing with one another, and forgiving each other, whoever has a complaint against anyone; just as the Lord forgave you, so also should you. 14 And beyond all these things put on love, which is the perfect bond of unity. 15 And let the peace of Christ rule in your hearts, to which indeed you were called in one body; and be thankful. 16 Let the word of Christ richly dwell within you, with all wisdom teaching and admonishing one another with psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing with thankfulness in your hearts to God. 17 And whatever you do in word or deed, do all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks through Him to God the Father. **Jas 1:22-23** But prove yourselves doers of the word, and not merely hearers who delude themselves.

5. Each Unbeliever who is saved and every application of Truth resists the devil and shows his charges invalid, in that it demonstrates a freedom from sin. Jas 4:7

Submit therefore to God. Resist the devil and he will flee from you. **1 John 2:1-2** My little children, I am writing these things to you that you may not sin. And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous; 2 and He Himself is the propitiation for our sins; and not for ours only, but also for those of the whole world.

K. Mankind's role in the Angelic Conflict is to be witnesses to demonstrate that Satan's charges against God are invalid. (God is not a coward and one can see why "cowards" are listed with those who won't inherit the kingdom. "Witness" is used over 200x in Scripture, frequently referring to the need for two or three witnesses to establish a fact and warning against false witness, like in the 9th commandment.) **John 1:6-8**

(Example in John) There came a man, sent from God, whose name was John. 7 He came for a witness, that he might bear witness of the light, that all might believe through him. 8 He was not the light, but came that he might bear witness of the light. **Heb 2:1-4** For this reason we must pay much closer attention to what we have heard, lest we drift away from it. 2 For if the word spoken through angels proved unalterable, and every transgression and disobedience received a just recompense, 3 how shall we escape if we neglect so great a salvation? After it was at the first spoken through the Lord, it was confirmed to us by those who

heard, 4 God also **bearing witness with them** (i.e. those who heard), both by signs and wonders and by various miracles and by gifts of the Holy Spirit according to His own will.

1. **The way that God deals with man verifies the Integrity of the Court. John 3:18 Cf John 16:8-11**

And He, when He comes, will convict the world concerning sin, and righteousness, and judgment; 9 concerning sin, because they do not believe in Me; 10 and concerning righteousness, because I go to the Father, and you no longer behold Me; 11 and concerning judgment, because the ruler of this world has been judged.

2. **God demonstrates individual responsibility by giving an already fallen creature the ability to make moral decisions and receive the consequences of those decisions, be they good or bad (John 3:18). The offspring of this new creature will initially not be able to never sin, but by grace through faith in Jesus the Messiah will be given the ability to not sin.**

3. **God demonstrates His Sovereignty by controlling the events of History without overruling the creature's ability to decide. He retains the right as king to overrule speech (Balaam) and actions (Saul). Num 22; Acts 9**

4. **His foretelling of events and the outcome of history, without overruling human volition, demonstrates His Omniscience and Veracity. Rev 22:6-7**

And he said to me, "These words are faithful and true"; and the Lord, the God of the spirits of the prophets, sent His angel to show to His bond-servants the things which must shortly take place. 7 "And behold, I am coming quickly. Blessed is he who heeds the words of the prophecy of this book."

5. **God demonstrates throughout history how Grace is compatible with His Righteousness and Justice, by permitting the angelic appeal of the verdict. Matt 25:41**

(By the way, if only 1/3 of the angels fell and God did not offer them salvation, "simple Justice having its way" there would have been no appeal)

6. **He demonstrates His Righteousness and Justice, tempered with grace, in every situation throughout history both to nations and individuals. He gives them a chance to repent until the judgment for their sins must be executed. Gen 6:5-7; Gen 18:20-21; Rev 18:5**

7. **Since men are to be witnesses, it is reasonable that God will provide at least one human, made initially in a lower niche than angels, who willingly came to God from every possible situation and passed every possible life test, to answer every possible charge of Satan. 1 Cor 6:3**

Do you not know that we shall judge angels? How much more, matters of this life? Cf Rom 3:19 Now we know that whatever the Law says, it speaks to those who are under the Law that every mouth may be closed,

and all the world may become (**Pres Act Subj GINOMAI + KOSMOS**) accountable (**HUPODIKOS = under judgment**) to God.

8. **His Veracity demonstrates the Immutability of His Purpose to provide the Highest and Best for His Creation. Heb 7:18**
in order that by two unchangeable things, in which it is impossible for God to lie, we have strong encouragement.
9. **His Eternal Life will be shared by grace through faith, righteously and justly, as a manifestation of His Love to all who simply believe in His son. John 3:16**
10. **The death of Jesus the Messiah on the Cross, the Only Begotten Son of God, as an innocent victim, demonstrates how He could condemn those who initially began in a relationship of "sonship" and yet chose to rebel against Him. Job 1:6; 2:1; 38:7 Cf Luke 23:15** "No, nor has Herod, for he sent Him back to us; and behold, nothing deserving death has been done by Him.
(The Son took the place of other "sons." Christ was not worthy of death but paid for personal sins on the cross; those who did not partake of His work are hence "worthy" of death and will partake of it.) Matt 25:41 Cf Rev 20:11-15
11. **His Omnipotence is demonstrated by holding things together for this appeal to run its course. Heb 1:3**
And He is the radiance of His glory and the exact representation of His nature, and upholds all things by the word of His power. When He had made purification of sins, He sat down at the right hand of the Majesty on high;

L. The Resolution of the Angelic Conflict is not based solely on numbers.

1. **God establishes a Theocratic Kingdom not a democracy. Rev 19:16**
And on His robe and on His thigh He has a name written, "KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS."
2. **There will not be a vote at the Great White Throne Judgment. Rev 20:11-15**
3. **The vast majority of mankind will be cast into the Lake of Fire. Matt 7:13-14**
"Enter by the narrow gate; for the gate is wide, and the way is broad that leads to destruction, and many are those who enter by it. 14 "For the gate is small, and the way is narrow that leads to life, and few are those who find it.
4. **God established a set of "Books" however that will account for all the numbers. Rev 20:11-15; 2 Cor 5:10; Dan 7:9-12**
"I kept looking Until thrones were set up, And the Ancient of Days took His seat; His vesture was like white snow, And the hair of His head like pure wool. His throne was ablaze with flames, Its wheels were a burning fire. 10 "A river of fire was flowing And coming out from before Him; Thousands upon thousands were attending Him, And myriads upon myriads were standing before Him; The court sat, And the books were opened. 11 "Then

I kept looking because of the sound of the boastful words which the horn was speaking; I kept looking until the beast was slain, and its body was destroyed and given to the burning fire.

M. During the course of Human History, God judges all aspects of Evil to demonstrate the futility of its self gratification. Ps 110:1

The Lord says to my Lord: "Sit at My right hand, Until I make Your enemies a footstool for Your feet." **Jas 3:14-17** But if you have bitter jealousy and selfish ambition in your heart, do not be arrogant and so lie against the truth. 15 This wisdom is not that which comes down from above, but is earthly, natural, demonic. 16 For where jealousy and selfish ambition exist, there is disorder and every evil thing.

1. The Thought Process of Evil (Evil 2) will be totally eliminated in the Eternal State, since there is no more curse. Rev 22:3

And there shall no longer be any curse; and the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it, and His bond-servants shall serve Him;

2. Human Good was rejected at the Cross, being of works, because salvation is by grace through faith in the work of Christ, according to the Plan of God. Eph 2:8-9

a. Hence, Human Good is not the basis of rewards for any Believer. Rom 8:6-8

For the mind set on the flesh is death, but the mind set on the Spirit is life and peace, 7 because the mind set on the flesh is hostile toward God; for it does not subject itself to the law of God, for it is not even able to do so; 8 and those who are in the flesh cannot please God.

b. The Church Age Believer's Human Good is burned up at the Judgment Seat of Christ. 1 Cor 3:10-15

According to the grace of God which was given to me, as a wise master builder I laid a foundation, and another is building upon it. But let each man be careful how he builds upon it. 11 For no man can lay a foundation other than the one which is laid, which is Jesus Christ. 12 Now if any man builds upon the foundation with gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, straw, 13 each man's work will become evident; for the day will show it, because it is to be revealed with fire; and the fire itself will test the quality of each man's work. 14 If any man's work which he has built upon it remains, he shall receive a reward. 15 If any man's work is burned up, he shall suffer loss; but he himself shall be saved, yet so as through fire. **2 Cor 5:10** For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ, that each one may be recompensed for his deeds in the body, according to what he has done, whether good or bad.

c. The Human Good of Believers of other Dispensations would be removed at their respective Resurrection when their deeds were evaluated. Dan 12:2-3

"And many of those who sleep in the dust of the ground will awake, these to everlasting life, but the others to disgrace and everlasting contempt. **Dan 12:13** "But as for you, go your way to the end; then you will enter into rest and rise again for your allotted portion at the end of the age."

3. Personal sins were judged on the cross. 2 Cor 5:21

He made Him who knew no sin to be sin on our behalf, that we might become the righteousness of God in Him. **1 Pet 2:21-25** For you have been called for this purpose, since Christ also suffered for you, leaving you an example for you to follow in His steps, 22 who committed no sin, nor was any deceit found in His mouth; 23 and while being reviled, He did not revile in return; while suffering, He uttered no threats, but kept entrusting Himself to Him who judges righteously; 24 and He Himself bore our sins in His body on the cross, that we might die to sin and live to righteousness; for by His wounds you were healed.

4. The Sin Nature was judged on the cross. Rom 6:5-7

For if we have become united with Him in the likeness of His death, certainly we shall be also in the likeness of His resurrection, 6 knowing this, that our old self was crucified with Him, that our body of sin might be done away with, that we should no longer be slaves to sin; 7 for he who has died is freed from sin.

5. Overt Agencies are judged throughout history as they reach their maximum potential for evil. Gen 6:5; Amalekites, Egypt, Historical Babylon, Prophetical Babylon, New Age Movement.

N. Every time God's Truth is obeyed in our human existence the futility of Satan's System and his accusations against God are demonstrated. The more difficult the application, the stronger the witness to God's Grace and Plan. Gen 22; Php 2:5-11

Have this attitude in yourselves which was also in Christ Jesus, 6 who, although He existed in the form of God, did not regard equality with God a thing to be grasped, 7 but emptied Himself, taking the form of a bond-servant, and being made in the likeness of men. 8 And being found in appearance as a man, He humbled Himself by becoming obedient to the point of death, even death on a cross. 9 Therefore also God highly exalted Him, and bestowed on Him the name which is above every name, 10 that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of those who are in heaven, and on earth, and under the earth, 11 and that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

O. Every failure to apply God's Truth is another opportunity for God's Grace and demonstrates the fact that His Omniscience has accounted for failure within His Master Plan. We are not to view sin lightly. Rom 6:1

Are we to continue in sin that grace might increase? May it never be!

P. The objective after salvation is to remain on the Godside of History, which is done by loving God and loving others. Mark 12:29-31

Jesus answered, "The foremost is, 'Hear, O Israel! The Lord our God is one Lord; 30 and you shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind, and with all your strength.' 31 "The second is this, 'You shall love your neighbor as yourself.' There is no other commandment greater than these.

21. The Relationship of Major Events and Time Frames to the Conflict.

- A. In the Restoration, God demonstrated Grace in providing a “Test Tube Case” for Satan’s appeal. Gen 1:2-31; Job 38:7**
- B. In the Garden of Eden, He established a situation similar to the angels, being in perfect environment, in an unfallen condition, in direct contact with the Love of God and under established Law. Gen 2-3**
 - 1. Two opportunities exist for their fall, those of cognizance and being deceived.**
 - 2. It is reasonable to believe that God would offer salvation to both.**
- C. The offer of salvation to mankind included the First Prophecy, the Promised Seed of the Woman. Gen 3:15**
 - 1. God placed His Omniscience on the Line.**
 - 2. He made mankind responsible to believe and obey. Gen 1:28**
- D. Satan’s attack focused on mankind via the Angelic Infiltration into human genetics. Gen 6:1-4; 2 Pet 2:4-5; Jude 1:6**
 - 1. This attack was designed in part to produce a genetically contaminated race of “hybrids” that could genetically self-destruct, and hence kill humanity.**
 - 2. It was a direct attack on the “Promised Seed of the Woman,” which the angels had specifically agreed beforehand to not do. Jude 6**
 - 3. For this violation of law, God executed the Justice that His Righteousness required, in His own timing, and used His Omnipotence to bring about the Flood on all the earth. Gen 7-9**
 - 4. It also demonstrates that mankind’s unbelief does not nullify God’s faithfulness. Rom 3:3 (There is no indication that any of those Free Moral Agents accepted salvation. They heard the gospel 120 years.)**
 - 5. It also graphically illustrates God’s deliverance of the Righteous. Gen 6:8 Cf 1 Pet 3:18 ff; Cf 2 Pet 2:5**
- E. In Abraham, God displayed that obedience to His Word brings long-term promises that will not change (Immutability and Veracity). Gen 26:5; Heb 7:18, 11:13**
 - 1. The Noahic Covenant also demonstrates this fact. Gen 9**
 - 2. God’s Omnipotence will do what is necessary for Him to keep His Promises, even in “impossible” situations. Rom 4:19-20**
 - 3. For example, God will have to raise Abraham from the dead to give him the balance of what was promised. Heb 11**

- F. In Sodom and Gomorrah God displays that His grace will expire to those who continually refuse His offer of Love, and flagrantly violate His standards. 2 Pet 2:7; Jude 7**
- G. The Exodus from Egypt displays God’s Integrity to keep His promises in spite of the inadequacies and unbelief of man, and also the precision of His prophecies. Exo 12:41 to the day.**
- 1. It pictures Divine Discipline, backed by Omnipotence, on the ungodly.**
 - 2. It also pictures eternal deliverance via eternal security.**
- H. The Mosaic Law came into existence to define sin and hence the categories of personal sins that Christ would pay for on the cross. Cf Rom 5:13**
- 1. It also defined the necessary qualifications of the Messiah.**
Matt 5:17 Do not think that I came to abolish the Law or the Prophets; I did not come to abolish, but to fulfill.
 - 2. It included requirements Messiah would have to fulfill. Cf 1 Pet 2:22 (Which He did)**
 - 3. It publicly defined sin so all might see the need for the Messiah. Rom 3:23**
- I. The United Monarchy demonstrates how God can bless many by association with one. 1 Cor 15:22; Rom 5:15**
 But the free gift is not like the transgression. For if by the transgression of the one the many died, much more did the grace of God and the gift by the grace of the one Man, Jesus Christ abound to the many.
- 1. David in many respects was a type of Christ.**
 - 2. God expanded existing prophecies and promises to David.**
 - 3. This further tested God’s Omniscience and power to control history without overruling Volition.**
 - 4. The more prophetic specifics, the greater the demonstration of Omniscience and the Glory of God.**
- J. The Divided Monarchy under the kings of Israel and Judah demonstrate the magnitude of God’s Grace even when His “Chosen” descend into evil.**
- K. The Dispersions of the Northern and Southern Kingdoms demonstrate God’s Veracity to keep His Word even in the administration of Divine Discipline to His “Chosen.”**
- L. The Regathering of Israel displays again His Grace to restore those that come under Divine Discipline and repent. Cf Daniel**
- M. The Intertestamental Period displays that the “silence” of God for long periods of history, does not mean He doesn’t know or care about what is happening. Cf 2 Pet 3:3-9**

- N. The First Advent is the focal point of the Angelic Conflict:**
- 1. He brought into being the “Promised Seed of the Woman,” our Lord Jesus, via the Virgin Birth who was not affected by Adam’s Original Sin. Rom 5:12-14; 2 Cor 5:21**
 - 2. Jesus fulfilled every required detail of the revealed Word of God, fulfilling all prophecies of the First Advent.**
 - 3. Our Lord did not violate the Law in any regard, and thus committed absolutely no sin. 1 Pet 2:22**
 - 4. This refuted a possible claim of Satan that “no one can keep Your laws”. (In the Appeal, Satan would claim that God’s Laws were so oppressive that no Free Moral Agent could keep them.)**
 - 5. God Himself, in Hypostatic Union, kept His own laws. Php 2:5-10**
 - 6. God demonstrated His Love for His creation in providing salvation and also that He do so without compromising His Righteousness and Justice, through a personal payment for sins. John 3:16,18,36**
 - 7. This payment for Personal Sins removed them as an issue for eternal salvation in the Angelic Conflict.**
 - 8. All Satan’s plans and schemes to stop the First Advent failed.**
- O. The Lord Jesus Christ in “Glorified Hypostatic Union” demonstrates how He can rule from heaven and still bring about prophesied events without compromising His Essence.**
- P. The Church Age is called the “Age of Grace” and points out how “easy” it is to serve Christ because of His Work on the Cross.**
(I.e. no elaborate ritual that is required, not looking at shadows anymore because the reality has come).
- Q. The “Rapture” of Living Believers displays how God can eliminate any form of “Second Death” because His Righteousness and Justice has been satisfied. The Rapture of those who have “fallen asleep in Christ,” dramatically demonstrates how His Omnipotence stands behind promised blessings. 1 Thes 4:13-18**
- R. The Coming Tribulation demonstrates that even during unparalleled pressures, never before seen in the history of the world, humanity with volition can and will still come to God, no matter the personal cost, during a time of maximum control by Satan and his forces. God’s Plan will still be fulfilled.**
- S. The Second Advent will fulfill a multitude of major prophecies of Scripture demonstrating again God’s Omniscience. It will also be the time of fulfillment of promises contained in the Covenants and the time of Discipline for unbelief. Cf Isa 24:21**

So it will happen in that day, That the Lord will punish the host of heaven on high,
And the kings of the earth on earth. **Cf Matt 25:41**

- T. The Millennium will be the time of “Peace on Earth” to demonstrate that peace is only through the Lord of the Armies, and that a Shepherd can shepherd with a “rod of iron.” Psa 2:9; Rev 12:5; 19:15**
- U. The Gog/Magog rebellion is Satan’s final appeal. It probably has to do with the revelation of his “personal glory,” which has been veiled through history. Satan fails. Rev 20:6 - 8**
- V. The New Heavens and Earth will be another period of God demonstrating His Omnipotence to bring about maximum blessing from His Love. Rev 21-22**
- W. The Eternal State will be a place where Free Moral Agents eternally give the Glory to God. Psa 30:12; 61:8; 75:9; 79:13; 111:10; 115:18; 145:1**

22. The Resolution of The Conflict on an Individual Basis.

- A. Personal denial of the Conflict does not remove us from it. Eph 6:10-13**
Finally, be strong in the Lord, and in the strength of His might. 11 Put on the full armor of God, that you may be able to stand firm against the schemes of the devil. 12 For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the powers, against the world forces of this darkness, against the spiritual forces of wickedness in the heavenly places.
- B. Mankind is exhorted to not be ignorant of Satan’s schemes, so information about his motives and methods are needed. 2 Cor 2:10-11**
But whom you forgive anything, I forgive also; for indeed what I have forgiven, if I have forgiven anything, I did it for your sakes in the presence of Christ, 11 in order that no advantage be taken of us by Satan; for we are not ignorant of his schemes. **2 Cor 11:3** But I am afraid, lest as the serpent deceived Eve by his craftiness, your minds should be led astray from the simplicity and purity of devotion to Christ. **2 Cor 11:13-15** For such men are false apostles, deceitful workers, disguising themselves as apostles of Christ. 14 And no wonder, for even Satan disguises himself as an angel of light. 15 Therefore it is not surprising if his servants also disguise themselves as servants of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their deeds. **2 Cor 4:3-4** And even if our gospel is veiled, it is veiled to those who are perishing, 4 in whose case the god of this world has blinded the minds of the unbelieving, that they might not see the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God.
- C. We are to “stand firm” against his methods and intention. Eph 6:13-18**
Therefore, take up the full armor of God, that you may be able to resist in the evil day, and having done everything, to stand firm. 14 Stand firm therefore, having girded your loins with truth, and having put on the breastplate of righteousness, 15 and having shod your feet with the preparation of the gospel of peace; 16 in addition to all, taking up the shield of faith with which you will be able to extinguish all the flaming missiles of the evil one. 17 And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God. **1 Pet 5:6-10** Humble yourselves, therefore, under the mighty hand of God, that He may exalt you at the proper time, 7 casting all your anxiety upon Him, because He cares for you. 8 Be of sober spirit, be on the alert. Your adversary, the devil, prowls about like a roaring lion, seeking someone to devour. 9 But resist him, firm in your faith, knowing that the same experiences of suffering are being accomplished by your brethren who are in the world.
- D. Personal impact and survival requires the “Full Armor of God.” Eph 6:10-18**
- 1. This armor begins with a Divine Attitude (unseen power) and willingness to act (“strength of His might). (we are willing to act to**

- put the armor on) Eph 6:10** Finally, be **(strong)** empowered in the Lord, and in the strength of His might.
- a. **Obviously, salvation, empowering by the Holy Spirit and Trust displayed through Obedience are required.**
 - b. **We lack the power to fight Satan and his forces alone.**
2. **Standing against the Devil requires the “Full Armor of God.” Eph 6:11**
Put on the full armor of God, that you may be able to stand firm against the schemes of the Devil.
- a. **The schemes in view are the areas of evil that he uses to try and entrap all mankind.**
 - b. **Maximum protection requires the full armor.**
3. **We must embrace the fact we are in a battle. Eph 6:12**
For our wrestling is not against blood and flesh, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the world forces of this darkness, against the spiritual forces of wickedness in the heavenlies.
4. **God tells us to take up the armor to use. Eph 6:13**
Therefore, take up the full armor of God, that you may be able **(have the necessary power)** to resist **(stand against - i.e. not become a battle field casualty, if you are injured, stand back up and resume the fight, don’t lay there and play dead) in the evil day (any day that you are awake)**, and having done everything, stand firm.
- a. **Others can help and should, but it is a personal responsibility.**
 - b. **Ongoing decisions must be made to stand against Satan, by not becoming a “friend of the world/” Jas 4:4**
You adulteresses, do you not know that friendship with the world is hostility toward God? Therefore whoever wishes to be a friend of the world makes himself an enemy of God.
5. **Truth and (Experiential) Righteousness are primary defenses. Eph 6:14**
Stand firm therefore, having girded your loins with Truth **(so you can righteously reproduce)**, and having put on the Breastplate of Righteousness. **(protect your heart)**
- a. **The first part of the armor requires the knowledge and belief of God’s Word.**
 - b. **The second part is obedience to God’s Word, walking the Straight and Narrow, not legalistic self-righteousness.**
6. **The intent of the armor is to spread the good news. Eph 6:15**
and having shod your feet with the preparation of the gospel of peace.
- a. **Spiritual warfare is not to be a hostile operation with those we hope will be saved.**
 - b. **When one attempts to spread the light of Truth, Satan’s forces notice and attack.**
 - c. **Attempts to spread the peace of salvation and Truth will be met with hostility.**
 - d. **The call is to be a witness of Christ.**

7. **God's Truth, believed and lived, can spiritually handle any situation. Eph 6:16**
in addition to all, taking up the shield of faith with which you will be able to extinguish all the flaming missiles of the evil one.
 - a. **This is the legitimate "shell" that the Believer is to have.**
 - b. **"Shells" formed from Worldly Viewpoint will fail.**
 8. **The ability to "wage war" in the conflict comes from Eternal Security and Spiritual application of the Word of God. Eph 6:17**
And take the helmet of salvation (**helmets protect the head, realizing your assurance of salvation lets you be able to say without fear, "What is man able to do to me?" Psa 56**) and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God.
 - a. **Our protection rests in the Security of our Salvation.**
 - b. **The primary offensive weapon is the Word of God, through which we are to spread the light without fear and with the same concern for others that God has. Eph 5:1; 1 Tim 2:4 Cf Php 2:3 (others are more important than yourself); 2 Tim 1:7 For God has not given us a spirit of timidity, but of power and love and discipline.**
 9. **Prayers are artillery in the Conflict. Eph 6:18** (This does not mean that your prayers are to be offensive to God)
With all prayer and petition pray at all times in the Spirit, and with this in view, be on the alert (**AGRUPNEW = means to be without sleep and spiritually alert, not just awake, but eagerly looking for opportunities to serve Christ**) with all perseverance and petition for all the saints.
 - a. **Pray for yourself to have impact in the Angelic Conflict.**
 - b. **Pray for others to do the same.**
- E. Tremendous impact occurs by staying focused on the Two Greatest Commands. Mark 12:29-31** Jesus answered, "The foremost is, "Hear, O Israel; The Lord our God is one Lord; And you shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind. And with all you strength." The second is this, "You shall love your neighbor as yourself." There is no other commandment greater than these."
1. **These are two commandments that are very closely related.**
 2. **To love God as we should requires that we love our neighbor as ourselves with the same attitude that He has. 1 Tim 2:4 Cf Eph 5:1 Cf 1 Pet 5:7**
- F. To fulfill these commandments God and others must be first priority. Php 2:3** Do nothing from selfishness or empty conceit, but with humility of mind let each of you regard one another as more important than himself, do not merely look out for your own personal interests, but also for the interests of others. Have this attitude in yourselves, which was also in Christ Jesus.

- G. This requires that our own personal needs be in their proper perspective. Basically, mankind's two real personal needs are identified by what Adam lost in the Garden. Gen 3**
- 1. Significance. Adam lost that to Satan as the "ruler of this world." Gen 1:28 Cf John 16:11**
(Be important, have value, useful, noticed)
 - 2. Security. He now possessed the fear of physical death. Heb 2:14-16**
Since then the children share in flesh and blood, He Himself likewise also partook of the same, that through death He might render powerless him who had the power of death, that is, the devil; 15 and might deliver those who through fear of death were subject to slavery all their lives.
 - 3. Mankind still seeks these two basic personal needs.**
(Example: sadly enough in marriage the man many times is motivated to seek a wife who will bolster his ego (Significance) and the woman seeks a man who will provide her with security – when it does not come about they build shells to protect themselves. Their initial goals are manipulative and problems will arise unless they change their goals. Roles are reversing in marriages today, which leaves both open to pain.
- H. The Basic Emotion of Fear that Adam possessed after the Fall developed a Basic Motivation, which was to cover his exposure to the violation of God's command. Gen 3:10 because I was naked.**
- 1. Mankind has a basic fear of exposure of weaknesses and failures.**
 - 2. To cover these weaknesses, a Basic Strategy is formed, which includes a "closet" in which to hide them. Gen 3:10 So, I hid myself.**
 - 3. Satan offers "things" to fill the emptiness.**
- I. Adam's Basic Strategy focused on human Goals (which Satan readily helped form) to seek Significance through a system other than God's, and Security in himself. Gen 3:7 and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves loin coverings.**
- J. When Improper Goals are blocked, one or all of three things will happen:**
- 1. Anger and Resentment. Gen 3:12** And the man said, "The woman whom You gave me, she gave me from the tree and I ate.
 - 2. Guilt. Gen 3:7** and they knew they were naked.
 - 3. Anxiety of the consequences of exposure. Gen 3:10** and I was afraid
- K. When Improper Goals are reached, a Temporary Satisfaction or Happiness occurs, which will be replaced by a feeling of Emptiness.**
(Example: Rich Young Ruler, in Luke 18:18, Money to prove Significance and Security, examine any detail of life and get the same results.)
- L. Only in God can the Personal Needs of Significance and Security be met, because He has "made us in His image" and provided for them. Gen 1:27;**

Jas 3:9 (we are made in the image of God) **Cf Rom 8:35-39** through our Lord Jesus Christ.

- M. Only with our Goals focused on living the First and Second Greatest Commandments will our Basic Motivation, Strategy and Behavior be correct. Only by getting these correct may we positively impact the Angelic Conflict and possess True Happiness in time.**
- N. Therefore, Impact in the Angelic Conflict is directly proportional to Obedience to all of God's Word. Gen 26:5; Php 2:8**
And being found in appearance as a man, He humbled Himself by becoming obedient to the point of death, even death on a cross.
- O. "Significance" and/or "Security" that comes at the expense of others are self-serving, not Christ serving, and indicate Improper goals. Matt 6:1-6**
"Beware of practicing your righteousness before men to be noticed by them; otherwise you have no reward with your Father who is in heaven. 2 "When therefore you give alms, do not sound a trumpet before you, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may be honored by men. Truly I say to you, they have their reward in full. 3 "But when you give alms, do not let your left hand know what your right hand is doing 4 that your alms may be in secret; and your Father who sees in secret will repay you. 5 "And when you pray, you are not to be as the hypocrites; for they love to stand and pray in the synagogues and on the street corners, in order to be seen by men. Truly I say to you, they have their reward in full. **Matt 23**
- P. Responses to circumstances marked by Anger, Guilt or Anxiety should trigger us to reevaluate Goals, realizing that we already stand in front of God exposed and that He is the Provider of our Personal Needs. Heb 4:13**
And there is no creature hidden from His sight, but all things are open and laid bare to the eyes of Him with whom we have to do.
- Q. Man personal tests focus on one's Attitude toward Significance and Security.**
- 1. John the Baptist clearly faced this test. John 3:27-30**
John answered and said, "A man can receive nothing, unless it has been given him from heaven. 28 "You yourselves bear me witness, that I said, 'I am not the Christ,' but, 'I have been sent before Him.' 29 "He who has the bride is the bridegroom; but the friend of the bridegroom, who stands and hears him, rejoices greatly because of the bridegroom's voice. And so this joy of mine has been made full. 30 "He must increase, but I must decrease.
 - 2. It involved a change of Significance toward men, but he passed it because he realized that his Significance is with God.**
 - 3. The Scribes and Pharisees flunked it miserably. Matt 6:1-5 Cf Mark 15:10** (delivered Jesus Christ up because of envy)

4. **Tests of Security come from many different sources: Living Grace tests, financial tests, health tests, Job Tests!!**

5. **Our Great High Priest sympathizes with these kinds of tests. Heb 4:14-16**

Since then we have a great high priest who has passed through the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast our confession. 15 For we do not have a high priest who cannot sympathize with our weaknesses, but One who has been tempted in all things as we are, yet without sin. 16 Let us therefore draw near with confidence to the throne of grace, that we may receive mercy and may find grace to help in time of need.

R. Our Significance requires a Proper Balance:

1. **Thinking too highly of ourselves is Arrogance. Rom 12:3-4**

For through the grace given to me I say to every man among you not to think more highly of himself than he ought to think; but to think so as to have sound judgment, as God has allotted to each a measure of faith.

2. **Thinking too less of ourselves is self-abasement. Col 2:18**

Let no one keep defrauding you of your prize by delighting in self-abasement and the worship of the angels, taking his stand on visions he has seen, inflated without cause by his fleshly mind,

3. **Having been created in the Image of God and that image being restored through Christ as a New Creation, constitutes us eternally Significant. 2 Cor 5:17**

Therefore if any man is in Christ, he is a new creature; the old things passed away; behold, new things have come. **Eph 4:20-24** But you did not learn Christ in this way, 21 if indeed you have heard Him and have been taught in Him, just as truth is in Jesus, 22 that, in reference to your former manner of life, you lay aside the old self, which is being corrupted in accordance with the lusts of deceit, 23 and that you be renewed in the spirit of your mind, 24 and put on the new self, which in the likeness of God has been created in righteousness and holiness of the truth.

4. **Temporal Significance through obedience to His Word impacts the Angelic Conflict.**

S. Security is built by faith in His Promises and that He will cause all things to work together for good to those who love Him. Rom 8:38 Cf John 14:15, 23.

T. Faith, Hope and Love are the key markers of Significance and Security being in Proper Perspective in our lives. 1 Cor 13:13 Cf 13:4-7; Rom 12:9-21

U. The Stability of Soul that these produce is proof that our toil is not in vain in the Lord. 1 Cor 15:56-58

The sting of death is sin, and the power of sin is the law; 57 but thanks be to God, who gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. 58 Therefore, my

beloved brethren, be steadfast, immovable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, knowing that your toil is not in vain in the Lord.

V. God never forgets our obedience and rewards it eternally. Heb 6:9-12

But, beloved, we are convinced of better things concerning you, and things that accompany salvation, though we are speaking in this way. 10 For God is not unjust so as to forget your work and the love which you have shown toward His name, in having ministered and in still ministering to the saints. 11 And we desire that each one of you show the same diligence so as to realize the full assurance of hope until the end, 12 that you may not be sluggish, but imitators of those who through faith and patience inherit the promises.

W. Let us follow the “rules” and please our God. Heb 10:19-25

Since therefore, brethren, we have confidence to enter the holy place by the blood of Jesus, 20 by a new and living way which He inaugurated for us through the veil, that is, His flesh, 21 and since we have a great priest over the house of God, 22 let us draw near with a sincere heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled clean from an evil conscience and our bodies washed with pure water. 23 Let us hold fast the confession of our hope without wavering, for He who promised is faithful; 24 and let us consider how to stimulate one another to love and good deeds, 25 not forsaking our own assembling together, as is the habit of some, but encouraging one another; and all the more, as you see the day drawing near.

Let your significance in time be left to the Lord and your security be in obedience to Him. There is Impact. Everyone faces these tests. Our security is not in what we have, for it can be removed. Our Significance is not in what men think of us but what God thinks of us.

We have an opportunity to be a witness of the strength found in God’s Word. Put on the full armor of God. Stand firm in the Faith. Be steadfast in hope. And abounding Love for God and one another. Encouraging one another and all the more as you see the day drawing near.